

## Table of Contents

<b>Introduction.....</b>	<b>3</b>
<b>Small Words Matter .....</b>	<b>4</b>
<b>Reincarnation .....</b>	<b>5</b>
<b>Why Jesus Died On The Cross .....</b>	<b>6</b>
<b>Faith In Jesus Is Necessary – Book of Life .....</b>	<b>11</b>
<b>Different Degrees Of Punishment In Hell .....</b>	<b>13</b>
<b>What Is Hell Like .....</b>	<b>15</b>
<b>Who Is To Blame For Turning The Earth Into A Wilderness.....</b>	<b>21</b>
<b>Children of the Devil.....</b>	<b>23</b>
<b>Jesus Was Not Created.....</b>	<b>25</b>
<b>Jesus, God from Birth .....</b>	<b>28</b>
<b>No Other God .....</b>	<b>34</b>
<b>Is the Father Greater Than Jesus?.....</b>	<b>35</b>
<b>Jesus, Son of God.....</b>	<b>37</b>
<b>When Was The New Testament Written? .....</b>	<b>38</b>
<b>When Are People Created?.....</b>	<b>41</b>
<b>Why Did God Create Us? .....</b>	<b>43</b>
<b>Predestination .....</b>	<b>44</b>
<b>What Jesus Childhood Was Like .....</b>	<b>53</b>
<b>Who Is ‘The’ Angel of the Lord?.....</b>	<b>56</b>
<b>Jesus Declares He Is God, Part Of The Trinity.....</b>	<b>66</b>
<b>Treasures in Heaven – Can You Take It With You? .....</b>	<b>71</b>
<b>How Big Is God?.....</b>	<b>84</b>
<b>Mary and Joseph’s Other Children .....</b>	<b>85</b>
<b>Mary Consented .....</b>	<b>87</b>
<b>Trials / Problems .....</b>	<b>88</b>
<b>Who Wrote the New Testament? .....</b>	<b>91</b>
<b>Did Jesus Perform Miracles? .....</b>	<b>97</b>
<b>Who Is The Anti-Christ .....</b>	<b>114</b>
<b>Ancient Israel Mission Work .....</b>	<b>116</b>
<b>The LGBTQ Debate .....</b>	<b>123</b>
<b>People Are Spirits in Bodies.....</b>	<b>126</b>
<b>Born Again .....</b>	<b>130</b>

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

Importance of Repentance.....	139
Faith and the Spirit.....	142
Was God Right In Sending The Flood? .....	152
Story of Lot / Living in a Godless Society.....	154
Thoughts on the Death of a Celebrity.....	158
The Battle of San Bernadino Strait (Oct 24, 1944) .....	159
Let No Man Glory .....	161
Even Great People Have Flaws .....	166

## Introduction

This write up is a series of notes on various topics that came up in discussions. This writer felt it good to share them.

This write-up has no copywrite. People may copy all or any portion of it.

## Small Words Matter

One must read each word of the bible very carefully because even the tense (past, present, future) can teach us something about God and us. For example, notice the word “am” in the following passage and how important it is in the teaching of life after physical death.

Matthew

022:023 The same day came to him the Sadducees, which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him,

022:024 Saying, Master, Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

022:025 Now there were with us seven brethren: and the first, when he had married a wife, deceased, and, having no issue, left his wife unto his brother:

022:026 Likewise the second also, and the third, unto the seventh.

022:027 And last of all the woman died also.

022:028 Therefore in the resurrection whose wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her.

022:029 Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God.

022:030 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven.

022:031 But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying,

022:032 I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.

In the same way, consider the following passage and what it implies about when human life begins.

Luke

001:013 But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John.

001:014 And thou shalt have joy and gladness; and many shall rejoice at his birth.

001:015 For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb.

Newer translations use phrases like ‘even before he is born’. So, what does this say or imply about the beginning of life? Small words matter.

## Reincarnation

Luke

016:019 There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day:

016:020 And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores,

016:021 And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores.

016:022 And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried;

016:023 And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.

016:024 And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame.

016:025 But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

016:026 And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence.

016:027 Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house:

016:028 For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

016:029 Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them.

016:030 And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent.

016:031 And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead

Another passage contradicting reincarnation is

Hebrews

009:027 And as it is appointed unto men **once to die**, but after this the judgment:

Not twice or three times. Only once to die.

## Why Jesus Died On The Cross

### Our Natural State

When we are born, we are cut off from God. In John 15:1-6, Jesus compares us to branches which are cut off from a vine – He being the vine. We can be ‘grafted into’ Jesus thru faith. Branches which are not wither, gathered up and are burned.

John

015:001 I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.

015:002 Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.

015:003 Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you.

015:004 Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

015:005 I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.

015:006 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

You see, God wants us to abide in Him, be in Him (John 15). A special type of union or communion of our spirit with Him.

### Why Do People Deserve Eternal Punishment?

If we die without being born again, *we are forever cut off from Him and His blessings*, and face various degrees of punishment.

Romans

006:023 **For the wages of sin is death**; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

Notice the following passage. It is God that decides the punishment for rejecting Him.

Matthew

025:041 Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, **Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels:**

Hebrews

009:022 And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; **and without shedding of blood is no remission.**

*This is the judgement, this is the penalty for everyone who rejects God.* This is the punishment each of us deserves because we were born separated from God. Why harsh punishment? Because God say so. There is only 1 way to be reunited to God and that is thru faith in Jesus that makes us one with Him.

John

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

003:016 **For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.**

003:017 For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.

003:018 He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

003:019 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.

003:020 For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved.

## Ephesians

002:008 **For by grace are ye saved through faith;** and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God:

002:009 Not of works, lest any man should boast.

Why Hell?

Some ask, why hell? Because that is what God decided. He is a jealous God

## Deuteronomy

004:024 For the LORD thy God is a consuming fire, even a jealous God.

Why is God jealous? Because He loves us so much. There are numerous passages comparing God's love for us to a man who loves his wife.

And God gives good things. But not necessarily to those who reject Him in the afterlife. See the next section entitled "All Good Things Come From God".

Jesus gave the following parable that helps give understanding. Remember, a parable makes 1 point. Do not try to read into the parable any more than what was intended. In this parable, the 10 virgins represent people, you, me, and everyone else on earth. Oil is a symbol representing the Holy Spirit. There are other passages in which oil is a symbol of the Holy Spirit too.

## Matthew

025:001 Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom.

025:002 And five of them were wise, and five were foolish.

025:003 They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them:

025:004 But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps.

025:005 While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept.

025:006 And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet him.

025:007 Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps.

025:008 And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out.

025:009 But the wise answered, saying, Not so; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves.

025:010 And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut.

025:011 Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

025:012 But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not.

025:013 Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh.

So the 5 virgins with lamps filled with oil represent people who are born again believers, as it is written in

Romans

008:009 But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

The 5 virgins without oil represent people who are not born again believers, those who do not have the indwelling of the Holy Spirit. They can be others in church who never were born again. Or they could be people who have another religion or none at all. In any case, they are locked out of the wedding feast which represents heaven. They remain in a place outside of heaven. What is that place like? See the section entitled "What Is Hell Like" for some insight.

### All Good Things Come From God

The bible also tells us all good things come from God and He is a jealous God.

James

001:017 **Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father** of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.

Those who reject God should not expect any 'good gift and perfect gift' from God in the afterlife.

Deuteronomy

004:024 **For the LORD thy God is a consuming fire, even a jealous God.**

004:025 When thou shalt beget children, and children's children, and ye shall have remained long in the land, and shall corrupt yourselves, and make a graven image, or the likeness of any thing, and shall do evil in the sight of the LORD thy God, to provoke him to anger:

004:026 I call heaven and earth to witness against you this day, that ye shall soon utterly perish from off the land whereunto ye go over Jordan to possess it; ye shall not prolong your days upon it, but shall utterly be destroyed.

004:027 And the LORD shall scatter you among the nations, and ye shall be left few in number among the heathen, whither the LORD shall lead you.

004:028 And there ye shall serve gods, the work of men's hands, wood and stone, which neither see, nor hear, nor eat, nor smell.

004:029 **But if from thence thou shalt seek the LORD thy God, thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with all thy heart and with all thy soul.**

### A Savior, A Substitute

But once we are born again, that is, once we are in Jesus, the Father sees us as one with Jesus. And since we are one in Jesus, He sees us as having paid the penalty of sin, because Jesus paid that penalty, and we are in Him.

Isaiah

053:001 Who hath believed our report? and to whom is the arm of the LORD revealed?

053:002 For he shall grow up before him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: he hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him.



## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 053:003 He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not.
- 053:004 Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted.
- 053:005 **But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed.**
- 053:006 All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all.
- 053:007 He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth.
- 053:008 He was taken from prison and from judgment: and who shall declare his generation? for he was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgression of my people was he stricken.
- 053:009 And he made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death; because he had done no violence, neither was any deceit in his mouth.
- 053:010 **Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise him; he hath put him to grief: when thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in his hand.**
- 053:011 He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities.
- 053:012 Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he hath poured out his soul unto death: **and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors**

Since Jesus paid the penalty, then once we are born again, God sees us in Jesus and sees us as having paid the penalty.

This is maybe a bad analogy. But think of a child that broke a neighbor's window. The parents pay the damage. Issue settled.

**Born Again**

Jesus said we must be born again.

John

- 003:003 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, **I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.**

What does this mean to be born again?

John

- 017:020 Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word;
- 017:021 **That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us:** that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.
- 017:022 And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that<sup>2</sup> they may be one, even as we are one:
- 017:023 **I in them, and thou in me,** that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.

That is what being born again means.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

## 2 Corinthians

005:017 **Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.**

005:018 And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation;

005:019 To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation

## Faith In Jesus Is Necessary – Book of Life

Some claim faith/belief in Jesus is not necessary. They claim one only need to believe in God, or only need to live a good life, or both. But the bible does not say that. It says faith in Jesus is necessary.

John

003:016 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

003:017 For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.

003:018 **He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.**

003:019 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.

003:020 For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved.

003:021 But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

John

003:036 **He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.**

John

008:021 Then said Jesus again unto them, I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins: whither I go, ye cannot come.

008:022 Then said the Jews, Will he kill himself? because he saith, Whither I go, ye cannot come.

008:023 And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath; I am from above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world.

008:024 I said therefore unto you, **that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I am he, ye shall die in your sins.**

John

014:006 **Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.**

Acts

004:012 **Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.**

Jesus gave the following parable of the vine and the branches. When we are born, we are like branches which are not in the vine. To be saved, we must be grafted back into the vine which is Jesus. Those who reject Jesus are like the branches which are not grafted in. They wither and are burned.

John

015:001 I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 015:002 Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.
- 015:003 Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you.
- 015:004 Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me.
- 015:005 I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.
- 015:006 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

The following passage tells us how those who do not believe in Jesus will be judged. Note that the 'book of life' refers to those who believe in Jesus as their Savior. So per this passage, those who did not believe in Jesus will be judged by their works, judged by how they lived their lives on earth. This will affect their punishment in the afterlife, in the lake of fire. Notice verse 15 which says "whosoever was not found written in the book of life", that is, who ever did not believe in Jesus.

## Revelation

- 020:011 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them.
- 020:012 And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.
- 020:013 And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.
- 020:014 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.
- 020:015 **And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.**

How is the 'book of life' described in the bible? There are several passages. Perhaps some of the more descriptive are

## Malachi

- 003:016 **Then they that feared the LORD spake often one to another: and the LORD hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared the LORD, and that thought upon his name.**
- 003:017 And they shall be mine, saith the LORD of hosts, in that day when I make up my jewels; and I will spare them, as a man spareth his own son that serveth him.
- 003:018 Then shall ye return, and discern between the righteous and the wicked, between him that serveth God and him that serveth him not.

Psalm 69 is a prophecy of Jesus's suffering. In it, it refers to the book of life. Notice that those who rejected Him are not in it.

## Psalm

- 069:026 For they persecute him whom thou hast smitten; and they talk to the grief of those whom thou hast wounded.
- 069:027 Add iniquity unto their iniquity: and let them not come into thy righteousness.
- 069:028 **Let them be blotted out of the book of the living, and not be written with the righteous.**

## Different Degrees Of Punishment In Hell

Some people believe everyone who goes to hell will receive the same punishment. But that is not what Jesus taught. Notice the following passage.

Luke

012:041 Then Peter said unto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all?

012:042 And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season?

012:043 Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing.

012:044 Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath.

012:045 But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the menservants and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken;

012:046 The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers.

012:047 **And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.**

012:048 **But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.**

So, people who had an opportunity to know the Gospel, know the bible, and rejected it will be worse off in the afterlife than those who did not have an opportunity to know it.

Perhaps one of the strongest passages on degrees of punishment is the following statements by Jesus

Matthew

011:020 Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not:

011:021 Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works, which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.

011:022 But I say unto you, **It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you.**

011:023 And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works, which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day.

011:024 But I say unto you, **That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee.**

And in the following passage

Mark

012:038 And he said unto them in his doctrine, Beware of the scribes, which love to go in long clothing, and love salutations in the marketplaces,

012:039 And the chief seats in the synagogues, and the uppermost rooms at feasts:

012:040 Which devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: **these shall receive greater damnation.**

There are other passages indicating this too.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

Now notice the following passage.

## Revelation

020:010 And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.

020:011 **And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them.**

020:012 **And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.**

020:013 **And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.**

020:014 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.

020:015 And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.

This is a description of the judgement of the lost, those who rejected faith in Jesus. There are many on earth who say they will get into heaven based on living a good life. What they do not realize is that people are saved and go to heaven based on whether they believe in Jesus as stated in

## John

003:016 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

003:017 For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.

003:018 **He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.**

003:019 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.

003:020 For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved.

003:021 But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

So, the lost will appear before Jesus's throne. Their works, the way they lived their lives, will be revealed in 'the books', and "judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works" meaning their punishment in the afterlife will depend on how they lived their lives on earth. No one is saved (goes to heaven) based on how they lived their lives on earth. Where one goes depends on faith in Jesus. Punishment in hell depends on (1) did the have an opportunity to know and believe in Jesus and (2) how they lived their lives on earth.

## 2 Corinthians

005:010 **For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.**

And some sins are more grievous to God than others. Notice the following passage.

## John

019:011 Jesus answered, Thou couldest have no power at all against me, except it were given thee from above: **therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath the greater sin.**

## What Is Hell Like

### Overview

It is probably helpful to give a summary of teachings before going into the bible passages.

First, hell is described both as a place of torment, lake of fire, place of darkness.

Second, there are different levels of punishment.

Third, hell and heaven are not open now. What may surprise people is that when the lost die, they go to a place of torment called Hades in some parts of scripture. After the final judgement they go to hell. Similarly, when a believer dies, they go to a place called Paradise. After the final judgement they go to Heaven.

### Hell Not Open Yet

Most Protestant churches teach that when an unbeliever dies, they go directly to hell. The Catholic church teaches a concept called purgatory. But notice the following passages.

In this first passage, Peter writes that God sent rebellious angels to 'hell' to await judgement. The second passage says the lost are judged, and "death and hell were cast into the lake of fire". The NIV translation uses the term "hades" instead of hell. So there seems to be some confusion because of semantics. The thought here is that when an unbeliever dies, they go to a place of torment sometimes called 'hades'. Think of it as a kind of jail. Jesus will judge all the lost some day and base punishment on how they lived their lives on earth. Once the final judgements are made, all who are in 'hades' will be cast into the lake of fire, also called 'hell'.

2 Peter

002:004 For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, **to be reserved unto judgment;**

Revelation

020:010 **And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.**

020:011 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them.

020:012 And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.

020:013 And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.

020:014 **And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.**

020:015 **And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.**

### Description of Punishment in Hell

Little commentary is needed here. But please note Matthew 8:12 which describes it as 'outer darkness'. So while most passages call it furnace of fire or lake of fire, it is also a place of darkness. Exactly what it is like is a bit unclear. The term

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

'fire' may be literal or figurative. But regardless, it is a very unpleasant place filled with evil beings (Satan and his angels, and evil people).

Luke

013:023 Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved? And he said unto them,

013:024 Strive to enter in at the strait gate: **for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able.**

013:025 When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are:

013:026 Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets.

013:027 But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity.

013:028 **There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrust out.**

Matthew

013:041 The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity;

013:042 **And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.**

Matthew

013:049 So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just,

013:050 **And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.**

Matthew

008:012 **But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.**

Matthew

022:001 And Jesus answered and spake unto them again by parables, and said,

022:002 The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son,

022:003 And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come.

022:004 Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage.

022:005 But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise:

022:006 And the remnant took his servants, and entreated them spitefully, and slew them.

022:007 But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city.

022:008 Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy.

022:009 Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage.

022:010 So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests.

022:011 And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment:

022:012 And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless.



## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

022:013 Then said the king to the servants, **Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.**

022:014 For many are called, but few are chosen.

Matthew

024:046 Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing.

024:047 Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods.

024:048 But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming;

024:049 And shall begin to smite his fellowservants, and to eat and drink with the drunken;

024:050 The lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not aware of,

024:051 **And shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.**

Matthew

025:014 For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods.¶

025:015 And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey.

025:016 Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents.

025:017 And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two.

025:018 But he that had received one went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money.

025:019 After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them.

025:020 And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained beside them five talents more.

025:021 His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

025:022 He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents beside them.

025:023 His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

025:024 Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed:

025:025 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou hast that is thine.

025:026 His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed:

025:027 Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury.

025:028 Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents.

025:029 For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath.

025:030 **And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.**

Matthew

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

018:009 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into **hell fire**.

Matthew

010:028 And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather **fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell**.

Matthew

005:021 Ye have heard that it was said of them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment:

005:022 But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of **hell fire**.

Revelation

014:010 The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; **and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb:**

014:011 **And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.**

### Cut Off From God, In Hell Forever

2 Thessalonians

01:006 Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you;

001:007 And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels,

001:008 **In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ:**

001:009 **Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power;**

Revelation

019:019 And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army.

019:020 And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. **These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.**

Mark

009:043 And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having two hands to **go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:**

009:044 **Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.**

009:045 And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, than having two feet to be cast **into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:**

009:046 **Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

009:047 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into **hell fire**:

009:048 **Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.**

Description Of One Man's Existence In Hell/Hades

Luke

016:019 There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day:

016:020 And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores,

016:021 And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores.

016:022 And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried;

016:023 **And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.**

016:024 **And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame.**

016:025 **But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.**

016:026 **And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence.**

016:027 Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house:

016:028 For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

016:029 Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them.

016:030 And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent.

016:031 And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead.

Does The Old Testament Teach There Is A Hell?

There numerous references to hell in the Old Testament. Some of them are listed below.

Daniel

012:001 And at that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which standeth for the children of thy people: and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation even to that same time: and at that time thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the book.

012:002 **And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt.**

Isaiah

005:011 Woe unto them that rise up early in the morning, that they may follow strong drink; that continue until night, till wine inflame them!

005:012 And the harp, and the viol, the tabret, and pipe, and wine, are in their feasts: but they regard not the work of the LORD, neither consider the operation of his hands.

005:013 Therefore my people are gone into captivity, because they have no knowledge: and their honourable men are famished, and their multitude dried up with thirst.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

005:014 **Therefore hell hath enlarged herself, and opened her mouth without measure: and their glory, and their multitude, and their pomp, and he that rejoiceth, shall descend into it.**

005:015 And the mean man shall be brought down, and the mighty man shall be humbled, and the eyes of the lofty shall be humbled:

005:016 But the LORD of hosts shall be exalted in judgment, and God that is holy shall be sanctified in righteousness.

## Isaiah

014:009 **Hell from beneath is moved for thee to meet thee at thy coming: it stirreth up the dead for thee, even all the chief ones of the earth; it hath raised up from their thrones all the kings of the nations.**

014:010 All they shall speak and say unto thee, Art thou also become weak as we? art thou become like unto us?

014:011 Thy pomp is brought down to the grave, and the noise of thy viols: the worm is spread under thee, and the worms cover thee.

014:012 How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!

014:013 For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north:

014:014 I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High.

014:015 **Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit.**

014:016 They that see thee shall narrowly look upon thee, and consider thee, saying, Is this the man that made the earth to tremble, that did shake kingdoms;

014:017 That made the world as a wilderness, and destroyed the cities thereof; that opened not the house of his prisoners?

014:018 All the kings of the nations, even all of them, lie in glory, every one in his own house.

014:019 **But thou art cast out of thy grave like an abominable branch, and as the raiment of those that are slain, thrust through with a sword, that go down to the stones of the pit; as a carcase trodden under feet.**

## Psalms

009:017 **The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God.**

## Psalms

016:010 For thou wilt not leave my soul in hell; neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy One to see corruption.

## Psalms

018:005 **The sorrows of hell compassed me about: the snares of death prevented me.**

## Psalms

055:015 **Let death seize upon them, and let them go down quick into hell: for wickedness is in their dwellings, and among them.**

## Psalms

139:008 **If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, thou art there.**

## Who Is To Blame For Turning The Earth Into A Wilderness

Isaiah

- 014:012 **How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!**
- 014:013 **For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north:**
- 014:014 **I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High.**
- 014:015 **Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit.**
- 014:016 **They that see thee shall narrowly look upon thee, and consider thee, saying, Is this the man that made the earth to tremble, that did shake kingdoms;**
- 014:017 **That made the world as a wilderness, and destroyed the cities thereof; that opened not the house of his prisoners?**
- 014:018 All the kings of the nations, even all of them, lie in glory, every one in his own house.
- 014:019 But thou art cast out of thy grave like an abominable branch, and as the raiment of those that are slain, thrust through with a sword, that go down to the stones of the pit; as a carcase trodden under feet.
- 014:020 Thou shalt not be joined with them in burial, because thou hast destroyed thy land, and slain thy people: the seed of evildoers shall never be renowned.
- 014:021 **Prepare slaughter for his children for the iniquity of their fathers; that they do not rise, nor possess the land, nor fill the face of the world with cities.**
- 014:022 For I will rise up against them, saith the LORD of hosts, and cut off from Babylon the name, and remnant, and son, and nephew, saith the LORD.

Sorry but we need to go off here on a little tangent... Notice verse 16-17 above which state Satan is to blame for the destruction of cities and turning the world into a wilderness. But now notice the following passage.

Amos

- 03:006 Shall a trumpet be blown in the city, and the people not be afraid? **shall there be evil in a city, and the LORD hath not done it?**

So how can both be true? It is because God allows Satan to do certain things. Notice the following passage in Job.

Job

- 001:006 Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the LORD, and Satan came also among them.
- 001:007 And the LORD said unto Satan, Whence comest thou? Then Satan answered the LORD, and said, From going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down in it.
- 001:008 And the LORD said unto Satan, Hast thou considered my servant Job, that there is none like him in the earth, a perfect and an upright man, one that feareth God, and escheweth evil?
- 001:009 Then Satan answered the LORD, and said, Doth Job fear God for nought?
- 001:010 Hast not thou made an hedge about him, and about his house, and about all that he hath on every side? thou hast blessed the work of his hands, and his substance is increased in the land.
- 001:011 But put forth thine hand now, and touch all that he hath, and he will curse thee to thy face.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

**001:012 And the LORD said unto Satan, Behold, all that he hath is in thy power; only upon himself put not forth thine hand. So Satan went forth from the presence of the LORD.**

And God sends/uses natural disasters to try to bring people back to Him.

Amos

**004:006 And I also have given you cleanness of teeth in all your cities,** and want of bread in all your places: yet have ye not returned unto me, saith the LORD.

**004:007 And also I have withholden the rain from you,** when there were yet three months to the harvest: and I caused it to rain upon one city, and caused it not to rain upon another city: one piece was rained upon, and the piece whereupon it rained not withered.

**004:008** So two or three cities wandered unto one city, to drink water; but they were not satisfied: yet have ye not returned unto me, saith the LORD.

**004:009 I have smitten you with blasting and mildew:** when your gardens and your vineyards and your fig trees and your olive trees increased, the palmerworm devoured them: yet have ye not returned unto me, saith the LORD.

**004:010 I have sent among you the pestilence after the manner of Egypt: your young men have I slain with the sword, and have taken away your horses; and I have made the stink of your camps to come up unto your nostrils: yet have ye not returned unto me, saith the LORD.**

**004:011 I have overthrown some of you, as God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah, and ye were as a firebrand plucked out of the burning: yet have ye not returned unto me, saith the LORD.**

**004:012** Therefore thus will I do unto thee, O Israel: and because I will do this unto thee, prepare to meet thy God, O Israel.

## Children of the Devil

Not all people are the 'children of God'. The bible refers to people as 'children of the devil' if they are not saved. People who are born again believers are referred to as 'children of God'. Notice the following verses in which the bible refers to unbelievers as 'children of the devil'.

1 John

003:010 In this the children of God are manifest, and **the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.**

John

008:044 **Ye are of your father the devil**, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.

008:045 And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not.

008:046 Which of you convinceth me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me?

008:047 He that is of God heareth God's words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God.

Matthew

013:024 Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field:

013:025 But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

013:026 But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

013:027 So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

013:028 He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up?

013:029 But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them.

013:030 Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

013:031 Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and sowed in his field:

013:032 Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree, so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.

013:033 Another parable spake he unto them; The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

013:034 All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables; and without a parable spake he not unto them:

013:035 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world.

013:036 Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field.

013:037 He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man;

013:038 **The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one;**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

013:039 The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels.

013:040 As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world.

013:041 The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity;

013:042 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

013:043 Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

## Acts

013:008 But Elymas the sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, seeking to turn away the deputy from the faith.

013:009 Then Saul, (who also is called Paul,) filled with the Holy Ghost, set his eyes on him.

013:010 And said, O full of all subtilty and all mischief, **thou child of the devil**, thou enemy of all righteousness, wilt thou not cease to pervert the right ways of the Lord?

## John

001:012 But as many as received him, to them gave he power **to become the sons of God**, even to them that believe on his name:

001:013 Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

## 1 John

003:001 Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not.

003:002 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.



## Jesus Was Not Created

Some people, especially Mormons, mistakenly think that because Jesus is called the Son of God, that means He was created. But noticed the following verse.

John

001:012 But as many as received him, **to them gave he power to become the sons of God**, even to them that believe on his name:

001:013 Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

So, it is a title. The term 'son of God' denotes a certain type of relationship one can have with the Father. When Jesus was on earth, He conformed His will to the Father. In this sense, Jesus was like a son and the Father was like a father guiding the Son. Notice the following passages which show Jesus conformed His will to the Father's – like a good son would to their earthly father

John

06:038 For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.

Luke

022:042 Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but thine, be done.

The term 'son of God' is also applied in the bible to Adam (Luke 3:18), the nation Israel (Hosea 11:1), angels (Job 2:1), and even Christians (20:36). Notice Mark 3:35, "For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother".

Now noticed the following passage. Verse 1 says Jesus was in the 'beginning'. Once again, some people wrongly think this means the beginning of the world only. But then notice verse 3. Since Jesus was involved in the creation of everything, and He could not have created Himself, then He was not created.

John

001:001 **In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.**

001:002 **The same was in the beginning with God.**

001:003 **All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made.**

001:004 In him was life; and the life was the light of men.

Colossians

001:014 In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins:

001:015 Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature:

**001:016 For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him:**

Ephesians

003:009 And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, **who created all things by Jesus Christ:**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

If Jesus was created, then the phrase "In the beginning was the Word" (John 1:1) would be incorrect. Also, if Jesus was created, the phrase "without him was not any thing made that was made" would also be incorrect.

Probably the verse which is most explicit that Jesus was not created is the one from Micah below. It clearly states that Jesus was from everlasting – meaning He has no beginning.

Micah

005:002 But thou, Bethlehem Ephratah, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall he come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel; **whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting.**

The prophet Isaiah also teaches this but in different terms. Verse 11 makes it clear that “the Lord” is or includes Jesus because He is the Savior. Some question if the word ‘everlasting’ is the correct translation. The actual Hebrew word is :עוֹלָם (’ō-w·lām) and according to Strong, it literally means, “Concealed, eternity, frequently, always”. So translating it to ‘everlasting’ is correct.

Another powerful passage on this subject is below.

Isaiah

043:010 Ye are my witnesses, saith the LORD, and my servant whom I have chosen: that ye may know and believe me, and understand that I am he: **before me there was no God formed, neither shall there be after me.**

043:011 **I, even I, am the LORD; and beside me there is no saviour.**

Notice that verse 11 makes it clear it refers to Jesus because He is the Savior. And verse 10 makes it clear there was no God before Him or after Him.

### What Does Begotten Son Mean?

The KJV translation of the bible uses the term ‘begotten Son’ in many places when referring to Jesus. Some have claimed this shows Jesus was created, or was born of the Father. Let’s look at some of those passages.

Psalms

002:001 Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing?

002:002 The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and against his anointed, saying,

002:003 Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us.

002:004 He that sitteth in the heavens shall laugh: the LORD shall have them in derision.

002:005 Then shall he speak unto them in his wrath, and vex them in his sore displeasure.

002:006 Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion.

002:007 I will declare the decree: the LORD hath said unto me, **Thou art my Son; this day have I begotten thee.**

002:008 Ask of me, and I shall give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession.

002:009 Thou shalt break them with a rod of iron; thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel.

002:010 Be wise now therefore, O ye kings: be instructed, ye judges of the earth.

002:011 Serve the LORD with fear, and rejoice with trembling.

002:012 Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their trust in him

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

In verse 7 above, according to Strong, the Hebrew word יָלַדְתִּיךָ (yā·lîḏ·tî·kâ) means, “To bear young, to beget, medically, to act as midwife, to show lineage”. That is why many newer translations use the phrase “You are my Son; today I have become your Father”. So the passage says Jesus is already the Son. And now, today, God the Father becomes the Father. Remember that the terms ‘Son’ and ‘Father’ when referring to Jesus and the Father are human terms which are used to denote the ‘social’ relationship between them, not the ‘physical’ relationship.

Now look at another famous passage in which the KJV translation uses the word “begotten”.

John

003:016 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

This passage was originally written in Greek. The Greek word translated as “begotten” is μονογενῆ (monogenē). According to Strong, it means “Only, only-begotten; unique. From monos and ginomai; only-born, i.e. Sole.”. So, some newer translations use the phrase “He gave his one and only Son” instead of “he gave his only begotten Son”. It is important to remember that the KJV translation is from 1611, and parts of it are even older. Meanings of words in the English language change over time – at least the most commonly used definitions can change over time. So when one looks at passages using the word “begotten”, one should remember this means “one and only”.

## Jesus, God from Birth

### Introduction

There have been many heresies regarding Jesus. One is that Jesus was merely a good man, not God. Another is that Jesus was merely a man until He was baptized by John the Baptist, at which point He received the Spirit of God. Now these topics were touched on in earlier chapters. This chapter goes into this further.

### Jesus is God, Part of the Trinity

Isaiah

44:006 **Thus saith the LORD the King of Israel, and his redeemer the LORD of hosts; I am the first, and I am the last; and beside me there is no God.**

Notice the above passage includes the phrase “and his redeemer”, indicating that Jesus, the Redeemer, is God.

Micah

005:002 But thou, Bethlehem Ephratah, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall he come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel; **whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting.**

The above prophecy is where the Savior would be born and it says He is everlasting, indicating He is God.

John

010:025 Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me.

010:026 But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.

010:027 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:

010:028 And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.

010:029 My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand.

010:030 **I and my Father are one.**

In the above passage, Jesus indicates He is God by equating Himself with the Father.

Philippians

002:005 Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus:

002:006 **Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God:**

The above passage also states Jesus is God.

John

017:021 That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.

John

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

001:018 No man hath seen God at any time, the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him.

Colossians

002:009 **For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily.**

The above passage states that Jesus is God.

John

005:018 Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not only had broken the sabbath, but **said also that God was his Father, making himself equal with God.**

John

010:025 Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me.

010:026 But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.

010:027 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:

010:028 And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.

010:029 My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand.

010:030 **I and my Father are one.**

010:031 Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him.

010:032 Jesus answered them, Many good works have I shewed you from my Father; for which of those works do ye stone me?

010:033 The Jews answered him, saying, For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy; and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God.

010:034 Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods?

010:035 If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken;

010:036 Say ye of him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God?

010:037 If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not.

010:038 **But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in me, and I in him.**

1 Corinthians

008:006 **But to us there is but one God, the Father**, of whom are all things, and we in him; **and one Lord Jesus Christ**, by whom are all things, and we by him.

Titus

002:013 **Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ;**

1 Peter

001:001 Simon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us **through the righteousness of God and our Saviour Jesus Christ:**

In the above passage, Jesus is referred to as 'God and our Saviour'.

**Jesus God Even At Birth**

Notice that in the following prophecy  
 A special child would be born in Israel  
 It would be a male child  
 He would be God in human form

Isaiah

09:006 **For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.**

009:007 Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform

This prophecy alone should be enough to show Jesus was God from the conception of His body. But let's look at other bible passages as well.

Luke

001:026 And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth,

001:027 To a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name was Mary.

001:028 And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail, thou that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women.

001:029 And when she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this should be.

001:030 And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found favour with God.

001:031 **And, behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name JESUS.**

001:032 He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David:

001:033 And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end.

001:034 Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?

001:035 And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: **therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God.**

Notice 2 things about verse 35. First, it says He is the Son of God. Second, He is called 'that holy thing'. But only God is holy as stated in the passage below. So 'that holy thing' says It is God.

Mark

010:018 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? **there is none good but one, that is, God.**

Luke

01:041 And it came to pass, that, when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb; and **Elisabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost:**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

001:042 And she spake out with a loud voice, and said, Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy womb.

001:043 **And whence is this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come to me?**

In the above passage, Mary would not be the 'mother of my Lord' unless Jesus, part of the Godhead, were in the child.

Luke

002:008 And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night.

002:009 And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid.

002:010 And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people.

002:011 **For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.**

002:012 And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger.

002:013 And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying,

002:014 Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men.

Notice verse 11 above. The angels could not say, "a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord" if He was not God at that moment. *If Jesus's spirit would have entered the body 30 years later at the baptism, then the child could not be called the Savior. The child would simply be another human child with no deity in it. So this passage is another one that makes it clear that Jesus, God and Savior, came into the world at birth.*

The story continues with Simon.

Luke

002:022 And when the days of her purification according to the law of Moses were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord;

002:023 (As it is written in the law of the LORD, Every male that openeth the womb shall be called holy to the Lord;)

002:024 And to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtledoves, or two young pigeons.

002:025 **And, behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon; and the same man was just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel: and the Holy Ghost was upon him.**

002:026 **And it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord's Christ.**

002:027 **And he came by the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law,**

002:028 **Then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said,**

002:029 **Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word:**

002:030 **For mine eyes have seen thy salvation,**

002:031 **Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people;**

002:032 **A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.**

In the above passage, Simon could only say he'd seen God's salvation if the child was the savior, God in human form.

The story continues with Anna, the prophetess,

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

Luke

002:036 **And there was one Anna, a prophetess**, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser: she was of a great age, and had lived with an husband seven years from her virginity;

002:037 And she was a widow of about fourscore and four years, which departed not from the temple, but served God with fastings and prayers night and day.

002:038 **And she coming in that instant gave thanks likewise unto the Lord, and spake of him to all them that looked for redemption in Jerusalem.**

In the above passage, Anna, like Simon, by the Holy Spirit, she recognized the child as the savior, God in human form, and not a mere child.

The Apostle John records Jesus's birth this way. It teaches Jesus was God from birth.

John

001:001 **In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.**

001:002 **The same was in the beginning with God.**

001:003 **All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made.**

001:004 In him was life; and the life was the light of men.

001:005 And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not.

001:006 There was a man sent from God, whose name was John.

001:007 The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all men through him might believe.

001:008 He was not that Light, but was sent to bear witness of that Light.

001:009 That was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.

001:010 He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.

001:011 He came unto his own, and his own received him not.

001:012 But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:

001:013 Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

001:014 **And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.**

Another passage showing Jesus was God from birth is below. Notice that even at birth, He was to be called Emmanuel, God with us.

Matthew

001:023 **Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us.**

### Story of John the Baptist

Now let's look at the story of John the Baptist who came before Jesus. The Apostle Luke wrote:

Luke

003:015 And as the people were in expectation, and all men mused in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ, or not;



## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 003:016 John answered, saying unto them all, I indeed baptize you with water; but one mightier than I cometh, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire:
- 003:017 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and will gather the wheat into his garner; but the chaff he will burn with fire unquenchable.
- 003:018 And many other things in his exhortation preached he unto the people.

Another passage starts with John speaking.

Matthew

- 003:011 I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: **but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire:**
- 003:012 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.
- 003:013 **Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.**
- 003:014 **But John forbad him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?**
- 003:015 And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him.
- 003:016 **And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him:**
- 003:017 **And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased**

Notice in the above passage, John does not believe Jesus needs to be baptized, indicating he believed Jesus to be holy, the Son of God, even before the act of water baptism. And notice in verses 16 and 17, where the Holy Spirit and the Father make themselves known. No were does it say that Jesus entered the body because He was already present in it.

The Apostle John records the story of John the Baptist this way

John

- 001:029 **The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world.**
- 001:030 **This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man which is preferred before me: for he was before me.**
- 001:031 And I knew him not: but that he should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water.
- 001:032 **And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it abode upon him.**
- 001:033 **And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the Holy Ghost.**
- 001:034 **And I saw, and bare record that this is the Son of God.**
- 001:035 **Again the next day after John stood, and two of his disciples;**
- 001:036 **And looking upon Jesus as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lamb of God!**

So, John the Baptist declares that Jesus is God, the Lamb of God, even before the act of baptizing Him. He could not say this unless Jesus was truly in the human body at that time.

## No Other God

There are several passages which make it very clear there is no God except the Trinity.

Isaiah

043:010 Ye are my witnesses, saith the LORD, and my servant whom I have chosen: that ye may know and believe me, and understand that I am he: **before me there was no God formed, neither shall there be after me.**

043:011 **I, even I, am the LORD; and beside me there is no saviour.**

Isaiah

044:008 Fear ye not, neither be afraid: have not I told thee from that time, and have declared it? ye are even my witnesses. **Is there a God beside me? yea, there is no God; I know not any.**

Isaiah

045:005 **I am the LORD, and there is none else, there is no God beside me:** I girded thee, though thou hast not known me:

045:006 That they may know from the rising of the sun, and from the west, that **there is none beside me. I am the LORD, and there is none else.**

## Is the Father Greater Than Jesus?

Some have claimed that the Father is greater than Jesus because Jesus said "the Father is greater than the Son" and "I can do nothing without the Father."

Yes, Jesus said

John

014:028 Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come again unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: **for my Father is greater than I.**

The Father is greater than Jesus in what way? In position but not in essence. Notice a few verses later, Jesus says,

John

014:031 But that the world may know that I love the Father; **and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do.** Arise, let us go hence

And

John

015:009 As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love.

015:010 If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; **even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love.**

In these verses, Jesus says He loves the Father. He submits His will to the Father because of this great love. This is illustrated in

Matthew

026:039 And he went a little farther, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: **nevertheless not as I will, but as thou wilt.**

And

John

005:030 I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; **because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.**

And

1 Corinthians

011:003 But I would have you know, that the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman is the man; and **the head of Christ is God.**

The following verse refers to the end times. Notice how Jesus desired to do the Father's will

1 Corinthians

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

015:023 But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming.

015:024 Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power.

015:025 For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet.

015:026 The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.

015:027 For he hath put all things under his feet. But when he saith all things are put under him, it is manifest that he is excepted, which did put all things under him.

015:028 And when all things shall be subdued unto him, **then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him**, that God may be all in all.

Remember, John 10 verse 30, Jesus says "I and my Father are one". And in John 1:18, "No man hath seen God at any time, the only begotten Son, **which is in the bosom of the Father**, he hath declared him.". They have a special unity and Jesus submits His will to the Father.

So that is why Jesus said the Father is greater, and Jesus said He can do nothing – because He submits His will to the Father because of His great love. We see analogies of this in the world every day. The president and I are equal under the law. But the president has greater power and authority. But we are equal as human beings. So the Father is equal to the Son, but the Son submits to the Father.

## Jesus, Son of God

Notice in the following verse, it says the Father will be a Father to Jesus and Jesus will be a son to Him. The passage does not say, “I will be His Father”. Instead, it says, “I will be to Him a Father” – kind of like what someone would say who was an adoptive father. So, the implication is that this is how They act towards each other, not that one is literally a birth Father to the Son. But rather, as someone who acts as a father and someone who acts as a son.

### Hebrews

001:005 For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, **I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son?**

This passage refers to

### 2 Samuel

007:012 And when thy days be fulfilled, and thou shalt sleep with thy fathers, I will set up thy seed after thee, which shall proceed out of thy bowels, and I will establish his kingdom.

007:013 He shall build an house for my name, and I will stablish the throne of his kingdom for ever.

007:014 **I will be his father, and he shall be my son.** If he commit iniquity, I will chasten him with the rod of men, and with the stripes of the children of men:

007:015 But my mercy shall not depart away from him, as I took it from Saul, whom I put away before thee.

007:016 And thine house and thy kingdom shall be established for ever before thee: thy throne shall be established for ever.

007:017 According to all these words, and according to all this vision, so did Nathan speak unto David.

The wording in Hebrews makes it clear what is meant in this passage.

## When Was The New Testament Written?

So, when was the New Testament written? It depends on which New Testament book one is speaking of. The Apostle Paul was executed around 65-70 AD. So all of his epistles must have been written before that date. How do we know which epistles were written by him? Well, in several he identifies himself as the author in the first few verses. For example,

### 1 Timothy

001:001 **Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the commandment of God our Saviour, and Lord Jesus Christ, which is our hope;**

001:002 **Unto Timothy, my own son in the faith: Grace, mercy, and peace, from God our Father and Jesus Christ our Lord.**

Another way people could identify Paul's writings is by the fact Paul wrote the salutation in the letter by his own hand. This implies that Paul may have dictated his letter to another, and then wrote the salutation himself. Notice in the passage below, Paul said he always wrote the salutation himself – in his own handwriting. Of course, when the epistles were copied, the copies did not have Paul's handwriting in them. But this is how we know Paul wrote the originals.

### 2 Thessalonians

003:016 Now the Lord of peace himself give you peace always by all means. The Lord be with you all.

003:017 **The salutation of Paul with mine own hand, which is the token in every epistle: so I write.**

003:018 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen

When were the gospels written? Some falsely claim they were written by unknown writers over 100 years after Jesus lived. (It is important to note that there are always apostates who like to glorify themselves than in the Word of God.) But is there evidence in the bible itself when it was written? Let's first look at the Gospel of Matthew. Notice the following passage.

### Matthew

001:019 Then Joseph her husband, being a just man, and not willing to make her a publick example, was minded to put her away privily.

001:020 But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the LORD appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost.

001:021 And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.

001:022 **Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying,**

001:023 Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us.

In fact, this is the pattern Matthew uses throughout his gospel. He states what happened and then points out the prophecy which is fulfilled. In fact, the word 'fulfilled' is used 16 times in his gospel. But notice the following passage when Jesus prophesies.

### Matthew

024:001 And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to him for to shew him the buildings of the temple.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

024:002 And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

After this passage, Matthew does not say the prophecy was fulfilled. He writes nothing about the temple's destruction which happened in 70 AD. This is very, very unlike Matthew – if he had written the gospel after 70 AD – because he always points out when a prophecy is fulfilled. So, Matthew must have written it before 70 AD.

Another interesting passage is in the book of 1 Corinthians which was written by the Apostle Paul. Notice...

## 1 Corinthians

015:001 Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you the gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye have received, and wherein ye stand;

015:002 By which also ye are saved, if ye keep in memory what I preached unto you, unless ye have believed in vain.

015:003 For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins **according to the scriptures**;

015:004 And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day **according to the scriptures**:

015:005 And that he was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve:

015:006 After that, he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once; of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep.

015:007 After that, he was seen of James; then of all the apostles.

So what scriptures is Paul referring to? Many great conservative Christian scholars like Dr. J Vernon McGee said they refer to the Old Testament because Paul often quoted Old Testament passages. But there are other great conservative Christian scholars like Dr. Gary R. Habermas which said they refer to one of the New Testament Gospels. Who is correct? The reader can decide. But this writer would like to point out that the tense of the passage seems to suggest it is referring to one of the gospels. If it were referring to an Old Testament prophecy, this writer believes the phrase, "according to prophecy" would have been used instead of "according to the scriptures". Or perhaps the phrase, "as prophesized" would have been used instead.

Much of this (what this writer wrote regarding 1 Corinthians 15:1-7) is speculation. Another item of interest is that Paul did not write "according to the scriptures" at the end of verses 5, 6 and 7 as he had after verses 3 and 4. Why? Was it because he was referring to Old Testament Prophecies? Or is this an indication that Paul was referring to the Gospel of Mark? Remember, the 2 most ancient copies of Mark, the Sinaitic and Vatican, do not contain verses 9-20 which list the people unto whom Jesus appeared after His resurrection. (And why do those copies not contain verses 9-20?) So much of this is speculation. But 1 Corinthians 15 seems to imply copies of one or more early Gospels were in circulation at that time (about 59 AD). This is not definitive evidence. But it is evidence.

Then there is the Gospel of Luke. To get a clue when it was written, one must look at the first few verses of Acts, which was also written by Luke.

## Acts

001:001 **The former treatise have I made**, O Theophilus, of all that Jesus began both to do and teach,

001:002 Until the day in which he was taken up, after that he through the Holy Ghost had given commandments unto the apostles whom he had chosen:

001:003 To whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God:

001:004 And, being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which, saith he, ye have heard of me.

---

Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

So Luke wrote Acts after he wrote his gospel. Now notice how the book of Acts ends.

Acts

028:030 And Paul dwelt two whole years in his own hired house, and received all that came in unto him,

028:031 Preaching the kingdom of God, and teaching those things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ, with all confidence, no man forbidding him

It ends before the death of Paul, which occurred around 65AD. So, it appears the Gospel of Luke was written before 65AD. This is not definitive proof. But it is evidence that it was written before 65AD. Otherwise, why not include Paul's death and the activities that occurred by other apostles after 65AD?



## When Are People Created?

This may seem like a strange question. But this writer has heard a Mormon claim that God created the soul/spirit of every human before the world was created, and then places that spirit into a human body as it is developed in the womb. This is different from the teaching of Catholics and Protestants which teach the spirit is created at the time of inception or birth. This writer is not aware of any bible passage that directly speaks to this point. But notice the following.

John

008:046 Which of you convinceth me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me?

008:047 He that is of God heareth God's words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God.

008:048 Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil?

008:049 Jesus answered, I have not a devil; but I honour my Father, and ye do dishonour me.

008:050 And I seek not mine own glory: there is one that seeketh and judgeth.

008:051 Verily, verily, I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death.

008:052 Then said the Jews unto him, Now we know that thou hast a devil. Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and thou sayest, If a man keep my saying, he shall never taste of death.

008:053 Art thou greater than our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thyself?

008:054 Jesus answered, If I honour myself, my honour is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me; of whom ye say, that he is your God:

008:055 Yet ye have not known him; but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a liar like unto you: but I know him, and keep his saying.

008:056 **Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day: and he saw it, and was glad.**

008:057 **Then said the Jews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham?**

008:058 **Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am.**

008:059 Then took they up stones to cast at him: but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by

This writer would like to point out a few things here. First, Jesus states He existed before Abraham was created. Second, the Jews did not believe anyone present there existed before Abraham. Third, the Jews believed Jesus was implying He was God because they believed the only way someone present there could have existed before Abraham was if they were God – and they did not believe Jesus was God.

There is also the story of creation...

Genesis

001:023 **And the evening and the morning were the fifth day.**

001:024 And God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature after his kind, cattle, and creeping thing, and beast of the earth after his kind: and it was so.

001:025 And God made the beast of the earth after his kind, and cattle after their kind, and every thing that creepeth upon the earth after his kind: and God saw that it was good.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

001:026 And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.

001:027 **So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.**

001:028 And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.

001:029 And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat.

001:030 And to every beast of the earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to every thing that creepeth upon the earth, wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for meat: and it was so.

001:031 **And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day.**

More details on man's creation are given in the following chapter.

Genesis

002:007 **And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.**

It does not state that God selected a spirt/soul and placed it into the man. It says, 'man **became** a living soul'.

## Why Did God Create Us?

Why did God create us? To have someone with whom He can love and have fellowship. Remember, **God is deeply in love with us**. This is expressed in many bible passages and in many ways. Some passages likens God's love for us to be like that of a husband toward his wife. And there are passages which show us that He wants fellowship with us. That is why many people say Christianity is not a religion but a relationship with God. Why hell? All good things come from God. Some people flatly reject God. In the afterlife, God is not going to give good things to those people. There is more to these topics.

Why did God create us? To have someone with whom He can love and have fellowship. Remember, God is deeply in love with us. This is expressed in many bible passages and in many ways. One is

John

003:016 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

There are other passages which compares God's love for us like that of a husband toward his wife. And there are passages which show us that He wants fellowship with us. Some of those passages are

Genesis

James

001:017 Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.

1 John

003:001 Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not.

003:002 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.

Colossians

001:012 Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light:

001:013 Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son:

001:014 In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins:

001:015 Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature:

001:016 For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: **all things were created by him, and for him:**

001:017 And he is before all things, and by him all things consist.

001:018 And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he might have the preeminence.

001:019 For it pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell;

001:020 And, having made peace through the blood of his cross, by him to reconcile all things unto himself; by him, I say, whether they be things in earth, or things in heaven.

## Predestination

The bible teaches a doctrine called 'predestination'. It states that God wants all to be saved and offers salvation to all, but no one on their own would come to God. So, God has selected some people that will be saved, and does something in their lives to draw them to Him. That is the basic concept of predestination.

This write-up at best provides a 'feel' for the topic. Many questions remain.

### No One Comes To God On Their Own

Isaiah

053:006 **All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way;** and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all.

Psalms

014:001 The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God. They are corrupt, they have done abominable works, there is none that doeth good.

014:002 **The LORD looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, and seek God.**

014:003 **They are all gone aside, they are all together become filthy: there is none that doeth good, no, not one.**

Psalms

053:001 The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God. Corrupt are they, and have done abominable iniquity: there is none that doeth good.

053:002 **God looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, that did seek God.**

053:003 **Every one of them is gone back: they are altogether become filthy; there is none that doeth good, no, not one.**

Romans

003:010 As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one:

003:011 **There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God.**

003:012 They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one.

John

006:037 **All that the Father giveth me shall come to me;** and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out.

006:038 For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.

006:039 And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of **all which he hath given me I should lose nothing**, but should raise it up again at the last day.

006:040 And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.

John

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

006:044 ***No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day.***

006:045 It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me.

**God Wants None to Perish (Be Lost)**

2 Peter

003:009 The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, **but that all should come to repentance.**

**God Chose Who He Will Save**

This is where it gets a bit confusing. As shown above, no one seeks God on their own. God chooses people on whom He will act and draw them to Him.

John

006:037 **All that the Father giveth me** shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out.

006:038 For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.

006:039 And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, **that of all which he hath given me** I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.

006:040 And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.

John

015:016 **Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you**, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.

Ephesians

001:004 **According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world**, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:

001:005 **Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will,**

Romans

010:020 But Esaias is very bold, and saith, **I was found of them that sought me not; I was made manifest unto them that asked not after me.**

John

006:044 ***No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day.***

Who? How?

John

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

006:045 It is written in the prophets, **And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me.**

**What Does It Mean To Be Called/Chosen**

To be chosen, one must hear the Gospel as it is written

Romans

010:013 **For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.**

010:014 **How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher?**

010:015 **And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!**

010:016 **But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Esaias saith, Lord, who hath believed our report?**

010:017 **So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.**

To do this, God ensures the Gospel message reaches those He has chosen as demonstrated in the following passage.

Acts

008:026 **And the angel of the Lord spake unto Philip, saying, Arise, and go toward the south unto the way that goeth down from Jerusalem unto Gaza, which is desert.**

008:027 **And he arose and went: and, behold, a man of Ethiopia, an eunuch of great authority under Candace queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treasure, and had come to Jerusalem for to worship,**

008:028 **Was returning, and sitting in his chariot read Esaias the prophet.**

008:029 **Then the Spirit said unto Philip, Go near, and join thyself to this chariot.**

008:030 **And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him read the prophet Esaias, and said, Understandest thou what thou readest?**

008:031 **And he said, How can I, except some man should guide me? And he desired Philip that he would come up and sit with him.**

008:032 **The place of the scripture which he read was this, He was led as a sheep to the slaughter; and like a lamb dumb before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth:**

008:033 **In his humiliation his judgment was taken away: and who shall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth.**

008:034 **And the eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray thee, of whom speaketh the prophet this? of himself, or of some other man?**

008:035 **Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same scripture, and preached unto him Jesus.**

008:036 **And as they went on their way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch said, See, here is water; what doth hinder me to be baptized?**

008:037 **And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.**

008:038 **And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him.**

008:039 **And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the eunuch saw him no more: and he went on his way rejoicing.**

Also, no bad thing can befall a person unless God allows it as show in the following passage in Job.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

Job

001:009 **Then Satan answered the LORD, and said, Doth Job fear God for nought?**

001:010 **Hast not thou made an hedge about him, and about his house, and about all that he hath on every side?**  
thou hast blessed the work of his hands, and his substance is increased in the land.

001:011 But put forth thine hand now, and touch all that he hath, and he will curse thee to thy face.

001:012 **And the LORD said unto Satan, Behold, all that he hath is in thy power; only upon himself put not forth thine hand.** So Satan went forth from the presence of the LORD.

And once a person becomes a born again believer, God seals them, and they cannot lose their salvation.

2 Corinthians

001:021 Now he which stablisheth us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God;

001:022 **Who hath also sealed us,** and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

There is much, much more on this (not losing salvation) in a separate write up.

### Predestination

This is also called predestination.

Romans

008:028 And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.

008:029 **For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren.**

008:030 **Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.**

John

006:037 **All that the Father giveth me shall come to me;** and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out.

006:038 For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.

006:039 **And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.**

006:040 **And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.**

Matthew

018:011 For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.

018:012 How think ye? if a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray?

018:013 And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that sheep, than of the ninety and nine which went not astray.

018:014 **Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.**

So, God does something to bring some people to Him. How? There are several ways God tugs at one's heart. The following passage gives some insight. Those that God calls, are brought to a saving faith in Jesus.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

Matthew

011:020 **Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not:**

011:021 **Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works, which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.**

011:022 **But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you.**

011:023 **And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works, which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day.**

011:024 **But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee.**

011:025 At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes.

011:026 Even so, Father: for so it seemed good in thy sight.

011:027 All things are delivered unto me of my Father: and no man knoweth the Son, but the Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him.

011:028 Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.

011:029 Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls.

011:030 For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.

### **But the Offer To Repent and Be Saved Is For All**

Notice the following passage which says the offer of salvation is for all.

Romans

010:013 **For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.**

010:014 How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher?

010:015 And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!

010:016 But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Esaias saith, Lord, who hath believed our report?

010:017 So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

010:018 But I say, Have they not heard? Yes verily, their sound went into all the earth, and their words unto the ends of the world.

010:019 But I say, Did not Israel know? First Moses saith, I will provoke you to jealousy by them that are no people, and by a foolish nation I will anger you.

010:020 But Esaias is very bold, and saith, I was found of them that sought me not; I was made manifest unto them that asked not after me.

Revelation

003:020 **Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.**

So, you see, God will save any who turn to Him. One bible passage puts it this way.



## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

## Deuteronomy

004:029 **But if from thence thou shalt seek the LORD thy God, thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with all thy heart and with all thy soul.**

So why do people not come to a saving faith? Two insightful passages are below.

## John

03:016 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

003:017 For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.

003:018 He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

003:019 **And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.**

003:020 **For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved.**

003:021 But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

The second passage is the parable of the sower.

## Matthew

013:003 And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow;

013:004 And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them up:

013:005 Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth:

013:006 And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away.

013:007 And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them:

013:008 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold.

013:009 Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

Jesus gave the following explanation.

## Matthew

013:018 Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower.

013:019 **When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart. This is he which received seed by the way side.**

013:020 **But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it;**

013:021 **Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended.**

013:022 **He also that received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the word; and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.**

013:023 **But he that received seed into the good ground is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some an hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

So, to summarize, people do not come to God because they give into their evil passions or desires. And, for the people who are lost, even if they hear the Gospel, they let something get in the way so it never takes firm root in them.

Does this surprise you? It is sometimes hard to understand the depravity of some people. I met some people online who are like this. One person in particular said they could never worship the God of the bible because of all the 'bad' things He did in the scriptures, and the fact that God set up a hell for those who rejected Him. She said this knowing that she would be in the group who rejected God. People like this are also mentioned in the bible. For example, notice the following passages describing part of the Great Tribulation period which is to come.

## Revelation

016:008 And the fourth angel poured out his vial upon the sun; and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire.

016:009 **And men were scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the name of God, which hath power over these plagues: and they repented not to give him glory.**

016:010 And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast; and his kingdom was full of darkness; and they gnawed their tongues for pain,

016:011 **And blasphemed the God of heaven because of their pains and their sores, and repented not of their deeds.**

Why Some Are Saved And Not Others?

## Romans

009:014 **What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousness with God? God forbid.**

009:015 **For he saith to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion.**

009:016 **So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy.**

009:017 For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth.

009:018 Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will he hardeneth.

009:019 Thou wilt say then unto me, Why doth he yet find fault? For who hath resisted his will?

009:020 Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?

009:021 **Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?**

009:022 **What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction:**

009:023 And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory,

God owes us nothing, not even mercy. But He shows mercy to those whom He chooses. This should not make true Christians proud, but humble. It all comes from God's choice and God's mercy.

## 1 Peter

004:018 **And if the righteous scarcely be saved,** where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear?

Thirsty?

So why are some people saved and others are lost? Are there any differences in the people? Or missed opportunities?"

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

Jesus implied a division among people – those that are thirsty for God, ie, those that have a strong desire to know Him, and those who do not.

John

007:037 **In the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink.**

007:038 He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.

007:039 (But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet given; because that Jesus was not yet glorified.)

And in the parable of the sower, Jesus showed that that desire for God could be crushed.

Matthew

013:003 And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow;

013:004 And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them up:

013:005 Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth:

013:006 And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away.

013:007 And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them:

013:008 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold.

013:009 Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

Matthew

013:018 Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower.

013:019 **When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart. This is he which received seed by the way side.**

013:020 **But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it;**

013:021 **Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended.**

013:022 **He also that received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the word; and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.**

013:023 **But he that received seed into the good ground is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some an hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.**

2 Corinthians

004:003 **But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost:**

004:004 **In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.**

God creates opportunities to know and come to Him. God creates that desire (to know/come to Him) in us. And God can prevent anything from crushing that desire, including acts and temptations of the devil. We have the choice to make use of those opportunities and follow that desire. God knows who will accept those opportunities and can be motivated.

**Is If Fair?**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

Who are we to question God?

Romans

009:014 **What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousness with God? God forbid.**

009:015 **For he saith to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion.**

009:016 So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy.

009:017 For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth.

009:018 **Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will he hardeneth.**

009:019 Thou wilt say then unto me, Why doth he yet find fault? For who hath resisted his will?

009:020 Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?

009:021 Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?

009:022 What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction:

009:023 And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory,

009:024 Even us, whom he hath called, not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles?

Isaiah

055:006 Seek ye the LORD while he may be found, call ye upon him while he is near:

055:007 Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the LORD, and he will have mercy upon him; and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon.

055:008 **For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the LORD.**

055:009 **For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts.**

Ultimately, we are responsible for our choices.

## What Jesus Childhood Was Like

The Gospels do not give much of a description of Jesus's early life. The following passage in Luke is the only passage in any gospel that talks of Jesus's youth.

Luke

002:040 **And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom: and the grace of God was upon him.**

002:041 Now his parents went to Jerusalem every year at the feast of the passover.

002:042 And when he was twelve years old, they went up to Jerusalem after the custom of the feast.

002:043 And when they had fulfilled the days, as they returned, the child Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem; and Joseph and his mother knew not of it.

002:044 But they, supposing him to have been in the company, went a day's journey; and they sought him among their kinsfolk and acquaintance.

002:045 And when they found him not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking him.

002:046 **And it came to pass, that after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions.**

002:047 **And all that heard him were astonished at his understanding and answers.**

002:048 And when they saw him, they were amazed: and his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing.

002:049 And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be about my Father's business?

002:050 And they understood not the saying which he spake unto them.

002:051 And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject unto them: but his mother kept all these sayings in her heart.

002:052 **And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and man.**

From this passage, we know Jesus demonstrated great wisdom and understanding, and studied the scriptures.

From the Gospel of Luke, we know Jesus could read. Most likely, He learned this in His youth.

Luke

004:015 And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.

004:016 And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, **and stood up for to read.**

004:017 And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written,

004:018 The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised,

004:019 To preach the acceptable year of the Lord.

004:020 And he closed the book, and he gave it again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him.

We also know from the Gospel of John that Jesus could write. Most likely, He learned this in His youth. What He wrote is unknown. Many believe He wrote the names of the men with whom she had slept and that is the reason they walked away.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

John

008:003 And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery; and when they had set her in the midst,

008:004 They say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act.

008:005 Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou?

008:006 This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. **But Jesus stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground, as though he heard them not.**

008:007 So when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.

008:008 And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground.

008:009 And they which heard it, being convicted by their own conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, even unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.

But Psalm 51 gives a more complete picture of Jesus's early life. In a casual reading of this psalm, it may not be clear that it is about Jesus. But we know it is about him because John 15:25 quote Jesus saying this passage (Psalm 69:4) refers to Himself. In particular,

John

015:025 But this cometh to pass, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause.

This psalm is the pain Jesus felt as He grew up.

A few special notes:

Verse 5 refers to Jesus dying for the sins of all people

Verses 7 and 8 refer to Jesus pain because He was seen as a bastard – the son of an unknown man. Even the other children of Mary and Joseph did not want to associate with Him.

Verse 12 shows His birth was seen as an open scandal. Those at the gate may refer to judges because that is where they sat. And the drunkards ridiculed Him for having an unknown father. In today's society, children of unwed mothers are not treated this way. But things were different, even in the 20<sup>th</sup> century.

Verse 15 refers to Jesus resurrection after His death

Verse 21 refers to Jesus being given vinegar to drink when He was crucified.

There are other references too. These are highlighted to show prophecies of His life.

Psalms

069:001 Save me, O God; for the waters are come in unto my soul.

069:002 I sink in deep mire, where there is no standing: I am come into deep waters, where the floods overflow me.

069:003 I am weary of my crying: my throat is dried: mine eyes fail while I wait for my God.

069:004 They that hate me without a cause are more than the hairs of mine head: they that would destroy me, being mine enemies wrongfully, are mighty: then I restored that which I took not away.

069:005 O God, thou knowest my foolishness; and my sins are not hid from thee.

069:006 Let not them that wait on thee, O Lord GOD of hosts, be ashamed for my sake: let not those that seek thee be confounded for my sake, O God of Israel.

069:007 Because for thy sake I have borne reproach; shame hath covered my face.

069:008 I am become a stranger unto my brethren, and an alien unto my mother's children.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 069:009 For the zeal of thine house hath eaten me up; and the reproaches of them that reproached thee are fallen upon me.
- 069:010 When I wept, and chastened my soul with fasting, that was to my reproach.
- 069:011 I made sackcloth also my garment; and I became a proverb to them.
- 069:012 They that sit in the gate speak against me; and I was the song of the drunkards.
- 069:013 But as for me, my prayer is unto thee, O LORD, in an acceptable time: O God, in the multitude of thy mercy hear me, in the truth of thy salvation.
- 069:014 Deliver me out of the mire, and let me not sink: let me be delivered from them that hate me, and out of the deep waters.
- 069:015 Let not the waterflood overflow me, neither let the deep swallow me up, and let not the pit shut her mouth upon me.
- 069:016 Hear me, O LORD; for thy lovingkindness is good: turn unto me according to the multitude of thy tender mercies.
- 069:017 And hide not thy face from thy servant; for I am in trouble: hear me speedily.
- 069:018 Draw nigh unto my soul, and redeem it: deliver me because of mine enemies.
- 069:019 Thou hast known my reproach, and my shame, and my dishonour: mine adversaries are all before thee.
- 069:020 Reproach hath broken my heart; and I am full of heaviness: and I looked for some to take pity, but there was none; and for comforters, but I found none.
- 069:021 They gave me also gall for my meat; and in my thirst they gave me vinegar to drink.
- 069:022 Let their table become a snare before them: and that which should have been for their welfare, let it become a trap.
- 069:023 Let their eyes be darkened, that they see not; and make their loins continually to shake.
- 069:024 Pour out thine indignation upon them, and let thy wrathful anger take hold of them.
- 069:025 Let their habitation be desolate; and let none dwell in their tents.
- 069:026 For they persecute him whom thou hast smitten; and they talk to the grief of those whom thou hast wounded.
- 069:027 Add iniquity unto their iniquity: and let them not come into thy righteousness.
- 069:028 Let them be blotted out of the book of the living, and not be written with the righteous.
- 069:029 But I am poor and sorrowful: let thy salvation, O God, set me up on high.
- 069:030 I will praise the name of God with a song, and will magnify him with thanksgiving.
- 069:031 This also shall please the LORD better than an ox or bullock that hath horns and hoofs.
- 069:032 The humble shall see this, and be glad: and your heart shall live that seek God.
- 069:033 For the LORD heareth the poor, and despiseth not his prisoners.
- 069:034 Let the heaven and earth praise him, the seas, and every thing that moveth therein.
- 069:035 For God will save Zion, and will build the cities of Judah: that they may dwell there, and have it in possession.
- 069:036 The seed also of his servants shall inherit it: and they that love his name shall dwell therein.

## Isaiah

- 053:002 For he shall grow up before him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: he hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him.
- 053:003 He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not.

## Who Is 'The' Angel of the Lord?

The Old Testament has many references to angels. Sometimes it is 'an angel'. Sometimes the angel is named. The Old Testament also has numerous references to 'the Angel of the Lord'. Why is he called 'the Angel' and not 'an Angel'? Who is 'the Angel of the Lord'?

All passages referring to 'the angel of the Lord' are below. Some scholars state the term 'the angel of the Lord' refers to 'the pre-incarnate Christ' – a way of saying, Jesus appearing before His birth. The reader can scan all of the passages below. But let's take a closer look at two of them. The first is

Judges

002:001 And **an angel of the LORD** came up from Gilgal to Bochim, and said, I made you to go up out of Egypt, and have brought you unto the land which I swore unto your fathers; and I said, I will never break my covenant with you.

In the above passage, the term 'an angel of the Lord' appears to be referring to God, or more specifically, Jesus. But more modern translations like the NIV and NKJV translate the passage as 'the angel of the Lord'. So there is an important difference in the way the Hebrew word was translated. Since it refers to God, 'the angel of the Lord' is a better translation.

The second passage is

Luke

002:008 And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night.

002:009 And, lo, **the angel of the Lord** came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid.

002:010 And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people.

002:011 For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.

002:012 And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger.

In this case, 'the angel of the Lord' appears to refer to an angel, not Jesus who is in manger. Once again, the NIV and NKJV, translate the term as 'an angel of the Lord', which is a better translation since it does not refer to Jesus.

So it is important to read these passages carefully knowing somethings they refer to Jesus, and sometimes not.

Genesis

016:006 But Abram said unto Sarai, Behold, thy maid is in thine hand; do to her as it pleaseth thee. And when Sarai dealt hardly with her, she fled from her face.

016:007 **And the angel of the LORD** found her by a fountain of water in the wilderness, by the fountain in the way to Shur.

016:008 And he said, Hagar, Sarai's maid, whence camest thou? and whither wilt thou go? And she said, I flee from the face of my mistress Sarai.

016:009 **And the angel of the LORD** said unto her, Return to thy mistress, and submit thyself under her hands.



## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

016:010 **And the angel of the LORD** said unto her, I will multiply thy seed exceedingly, that it shall not be numbered for multitude.

016:011 **And the angel of the LORD** said unto her, Behold, thou art with child and shalt bear a son, and shalt call his name Ishmael; because the LORD hath heard thy affliction.

## Genesis

022:010 And Abraham stretched forth his hand, and took the knife to slay his son.

022:011 **And the angel of the LORD** called unto him out of heaven, and said, Abraham, Abraham: and he said, Here am I.

022:012 And he said, Lay not thine hand upon the lad, neither do thou any thing unto him: for now I know that thou fearest God, seeing thou hast not withheld thy son, thine only son from me.

022:013 And Abraham lifted up his eyes, and looked, and behold behind him a ram caught in a thicket by his horns: and Abraham went and took the ram, and offered him up for a burnt offering in the stead of his son.

022:014 And Abraham called the name of that place Jehovahjireh: as it is said to this day, In the mount of the LORD it shall be seen.

022:015 **And the angel of the LORD** called unto Abraham out of heaven the second time,

022:016 And said, By myself have I sworn, saith the LORD, for because thou hast done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son:

022:017 That in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies;

022:018 And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed my voice.

## Exodus

003:001 Now Moses kept the flock of Jethro his father in law, the priest of Midian: and he led the flock to the backside of the desert, and came to the mountain of God, even to Horeb.

003:002 **And the angel of the LORD** appeared unto him in a flame of fire out of the midst of a bush: and he looked, and, behold, the bush burned with fire, and the bush was not consumed.

003:003 And Moses said, I will now turn aside, and see this great sight, why the bush is not burnt.

003:004 And when the LORD saw that he turned aside to see, God called unto him out of the midst of the bush, and said, Moses, Moses. And he said, Here am I.

003:005 And he said, Draw not nigh hither: put off thy shoes from off thy feet, for the place whereon thou standest is holy ground.

003:006 Moreover he said, I am the God of thy father, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. And Moses hid his face; for he was afraid to look upon God.

003:007 And the LORD said, I have surely seen the affliction of my people which are in Egypt, and have heard their cry by reason of their taskmasters; for I know their sorrows;

## Numbers

022:020 And God came unto Balaam at night, and said unto him, If the men come to call thee, rise up, and go with them; but yet the word which I shall say unto thee, that shalt thou do.

022:021 And Balaam rose up in the morning, and saddled his ass, and went with the princes of Moab.

022:022 And God's anger was kindled because he went: and the **angel of the LORD** stood in the way for an adversary against him. Now he was riding upon his ass, and his two servants were with him.

022:023 And the ass saw the **angel of the LORD** standing in the way, and his sword drawn in his hand: and the ass turned aside out of the way, and went into the field: and Balaam smote the ass, to turn her into the way.

022:024 But the **angel of the LORD** stood in a path of the vineyards, a wall being on this side, and a wall on that side.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 022:025 And when the ass saw the **angel of the LORD**, she thrust herself unto the wall, and crushed Balaam's foot against the wall: and he smote her again.
- 022:026 And the **angel of the LORD** went further, and stood in a narrow place, where was no way to turn either to the right hand or to the left.
- 022:027 And when the ass saw the **angel of the LORD**, she fell down under Balaam: and Balaam's anger was kindled, and he smote the ass with a staff.
- 022:028 And the LORD opened the mouth of the ass, and she said unto Balaam, What have I done unto thee, that thou hast smitten me these three times?
- 022:029 And Balaam said unto the ass, Because thou hast mocked me: I would there were a sword in mine hand, for now would I kill thee.
- 022:030 And the ass said unto Balaam, Am not I thine ass, upon which thou hast ridden ever since I was thine unto this day? was I ever wont to do so unto thee? And he said, Nay.
- 022:031 Then the LORD opened the eyes of Balaam, and **he saw the angel of the LORD standing in the way**, and his sword drawn in his hand: and he bowed down his head, and fell flat on his face.
- 022:032 And the **angel of the LORD** said unto him, Wherefore hast thou smitten thine ass these three times? behold, I went out to withstand thee, because thy way is perverse before me:
- 022:033 And the ass saw me, and turned from me these three times: unless she had turned from me, surely now also I had slain thee, and saved her alive.
- 022:034 And Balaam said unto the **angel of the LORD**, I have sinned; for I knew not that thou stoodest in the way against me: now therefore, if it displease thee, I will get me back again.
- 022:035 And the **angel of the LORD** said unto Balaam, Go with the men: but only the word that I shall speak unto thee, that thou shalt speak. So Balaam went with the princes of Balak.

## Judges

- 002:001 And **an angel of the LORD** came up from Gilgal to Bochim, and said, I made you to go up out of Egypt, and have brought you unto the land which I swore unto your fathers; and I said, I will never break my covenant with you.
- 002:002 And ye shall make no league with the inhabitants of this land; ye shall throw down their altars: but ye have not obeyed my voice: why have ye done this?
- 002:003 Wherefore I also said, I will not drive them out from before you; but they shall be as thorns in your sides, and their gods shall be a snare unto you.
- 002:004 And it came to pass, when **the angel of the LORD** spake these words unto all the children of Israel, that the people lifted up their voice, and wept.

## Judges

- 005:023 Curse ye Meroz, said the **angel of the LORD**, curse ye bitterly the inhabitants thereof; because they came not to the help of the LORD, to the help of the LORD against the mighty.

## Judges

- 006:006 And Israel was greatly impoverished because of the Midianites; and the children of Israel cried unto the LORD.
- 006:007 And it came to pass, when the children of Israel cried unto the LORD because of the Midianites,
- 006:008 That the LORD sent a prophet unto the children of Israel, which said unto them, Thus saith the LORD God of Israel, I brought you up from Egypt, and brought you forth out of the house of bondage;
- 006:009 And I delivered you out of the hand of the Egyptians, and out of the hand of all that oppressed you, and drave them out from before you, and gave you their land;

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 006:010 And I said unto you, I am the LORD your God; fear not the gods of the Amorites, in whose land ye dwell: but ye have not obeyed my voice.
- 006:011 And there came **an angel of the LORD**, and sat under an oak which was in Ophrah, that pertained unto Joash the Abiezrite: and his son Gideon threshed wheat by the winepress, to hide it from the Midianites.
- 006:012 And **the angel of the LORD** appeared unto him, and said unto him, The LORD is with thee, thou mighty man of valour.
- 006:013 And Gideon said unto him, Oh my Lord, if the LORD be with us, why then is all this befallen us? and where be all his miracles which our fathers told us of, saying, Did not the LORD bring us up from Egypt? but now the LORD hath forsaken us, and delivered us into the hands of the Midianites.
- 006:014 And the LORD looked upon him, and said, Go in this thy might, and thou shalt save Israel from the hand of the Midianites: have not I sent thee?
- 006:015 And he said unto him, Oh my Lord, wherewith shall I save Israel? behold, my family is poor in Manasseh, and I am the least in my father's house.
- 006:016 And the LORD said unto him, Surely I will be with thee, and thou shalt smite the Midianites as one man.
- 006:017 And he said unto him, If now I have found grace in thy sight, then shew me a sign that thou talkest with me.
- 006:018 Depart not hence, I pray thee, until I come unto thee, and bring forth my present, and set it before thee. And he said, I will tarry until thou come again.
- 006:019 And Gideon went in, and made ready a kid, and unleavened cakes of an ephah of flour: the flesh he put in a basket, and he put the broth in a pot, and brought it out unto him under the oak, and presented it.
- 006:020 And the angel of God said unto him, Take the flesh and the unleavened cakes, and lay them upon this rock, and pour out the broth. And he did so.
- 006:021 Then **the angel of the LORD** put forth the end of the staff that was in his hand, and touched the flesh and the unleavened cakes; and there rose up fire out of the rock, and consumed the flesh and the unleavened cakes. Then **the angel of the LORD** departed out of his sight.
- 006:022 And when Gideon perceived that he was **an angel of the LORD**, Gideon said, Alas, O LORD God! for because I have seen **an angel of the LORD** face to face.
- 006:023 And the LORD said unto him, Peace be unto thee; fear not: thou shalt not die.
- 006:024 Then Gideon built an altar there unto the LORD, and called it Jehovahshalom: unto this day it is yet in Ophrah of the Abiezrites.

## Judges

- 013:003 And **the angel of the LORD** appeared unto the woman, and said unto her, Behold now, thou art barren, and bearest not: but thou shalt conceive, and bear a son.
- 013:004 Now therefore beware, I pray thee, and drink not wine nor strong drink, and eat not any unclean thing:
- 013:005 For, lo, thou shalt conceive, and bear a son; and no razor shall come on his head: for the child shall be a Nazarite unto God from the womb: and he shall begin to deliver Israel out of the hand of the Philistines.
- 013:006 Then the woman came and told her husband, saying, A man of God came unto me, and his countenance was like the countenance of an angel of God, very terrible: but I asked him not whence he was, neither told he me his name:
- 013:007 But he said unto me, Behold, thou shalt conceive, and bear a son; and now drink no wine nor strong drink, neither eat any unclean thing: for the child shall be a Nazarite to God from the womb to the day of his death.
- 013:008 Then Manoah intreated the LORD, and said, O my Lord, let the man of God which thou didst send come again unto us, and teach us what we shall do unto the child that shall be born.
- 013:009 And God hearkened to the voice of Manoah; and **the angel of God** came again unto the woman as she sat in the field: but Manoah her husband was not with her.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 013:010 And the woman made haste, and ran, and shewed her husband, and said unto him, Behold, the man hath appeared unto me, that came unto me the other day.
- 013:011 And Manoah arose, and went after his wife, and came to the man, and said unto him, Art thou the man that spakest unto the woman? And he said, I am.
- 013:012 And Manoah said, Now let thy words come to pass. How shall we order the child, and how shall we do unto him?
- 013:013 And **the angel of the LORD** said unto Manoah, Of all that I said unto the woman let her beware.
- 013:014 She may not eat of any thing that cometh of the vine, neither let her drink wine or strong drink, nor eat any unclean thing: all that I commanded her let her observe.
- 013:015 And Manoah said unto **the angel of the LORD**, I pray thee, let us detain thee, until we shall have made ready a kid for thee.
- 013:016 **And the angel of the LORD said unto Manoah, Though thou detain me, I will not eat of thy bread: and if thou wilt offer a burnt offering, thou must offer it unto the LORD. For Manoah knew not that he was an angel of the LORD.**
- 013:017 And Manoah said unto **the angel of the LORD**, What is thy name, that when thy sayings come to pass we may do thee honour?
- 013:018 And **the angel of the LORD** said unto him, Why askest thou thus after my name, seeing it is secret?
- 013:019 So Manoah took a kid with a meat offering, and offered it upon a rock unto the LORD: and the angel did wonderously; and Manoah and his wife looked on.
- 013:020 For it came to pass, when the flame went up toward heaven from off the altar, that **the angel of the LORD** ascended in the flame of the altar. And Manoah and his wife looked on it, and fell on their faces to the ground.
- 013:021 But **the angel of the LORD** did no more appear to Manoah and to his wife. Then Manoah knew that he was **an angel of the LORD**.
- 013:022 And Manoah said unto his wife, We shall surely die, because we have seen God.

## 2 Samuel

- 024:015 So the LORD sent a pestilence upon Israel from the morning even to the time appointed: and there died of the people from Dan even to Beersheba seventy thousand men.
- 024:016 And when the angel stretched out his hand upon Jerusalem to destroy it, the LORD repented him of the evil, and said to the angel that destroyed the people, It is enough: stay now thine hand. And the **angel of the LORD** was by the threshingplace of Araunah the Jebusite.
- 024:017 And David spake unto the LORD when he saw the angel that smote the people, and said, Lo, I have sinned, and I have done wickedly: but these sheep, what have they done? let thine hand, I pray thee, be against me, and against my father's house.

## 1 Kings

- 019:001 And Ahab told Jezebel all that Elijah had done, and withal how he had slain all the prophets with the sword.
- 019:002 Then Jezebel sent a messenger unto Elijah, saying, So let the gods do to me, and more also, if I make not thy life as the life of one of them by to morrow about this time.
- 019:003 And when he saw that, he arose, and went for his life, and came to Beersheba, which belongeth to Judah, and left his servant there.
- 019:004 But he himself went a day's journey into the wilderness, and came and sat down under a juniper tree: and he requested for himself that he might die; and said, It is enough; now, O LORD, take away my life; for I am not better than my fathers.
- 019:005 And as he lay and slept under a juniper tree, behold, then an angel touched him, and said unto him, Arise and eat.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

019:006 And he looked, and, behold, there was a cake baked on the coals, and a cruse of water at his head. And he did eat and drink, and laid him down again.

019:007 And **the angel of the LORD** came again the second time, and touched him, and said, Arise and eat; because the journey is too great for thee.

## 2 Kings

001:001 Then Moab rebelled against Israel after the death of Ahab.

001:002 And Ahaziah fell down through a lattice in his upper chamber that was in Samaria, and was sick: and he sent messengers, and said unto them, Go, enquire of Baalzebub the god of Ekron whether I shall recover of this disease.

001:003 But **the angel of the LORD** said to Elijah the Tishbite, Arise, go up to meet the messengers of the king of Samaria, and say unto them, Is it not because there is not a God in Israel, that ye go to enquire of Baalzebub the god of Ekron?

001:004 Now therefore thus saith the LORD, Thou shalt not come down from that bed on which thou art gone up, but shalt surely die. And Elijah departed.

001:005 And when the messengers turned back unto him, he said unto them, Why are ye now turned back?

001:006 And they said unto him, There came a man up to meet us, and said unto us, Go, turn again unto the king that sent you, and say unto him, Thus saith the LORD, Is it not because there is not a God in Israel, that thou sendest to enquire of Baalzebub the god of Ekron? therefore thou shalt not come down from that bed on which thou art gone up, but shalt surely die.

001:007 And he said unto them, What manner of man was he which came up to meet you, and told you these words?

001:008 And they answered him, He was an hairy man, and girt with a girdle of leather about his loins. And he said, It is Elijah the Tishbite.

## 2 Kings

001:015 And **the angel of the LORD** said unto Elijah, Go down with him: be not afraid of him. And he arose, and went down with him unto the king.

## 2 Kings

019:035 And it came to pass that night, that **the angel of the LORD** went out, and smote in the camp of the Assyrians an hundred fourscore and five thousand: and when they arose early in the morning, behold, they were all dead corpses.

019:036 So Sennacherib king of Assyria departed, and went and returned, and dwelt at Nineveh.

## 1 Chronicles

021:009 And the LORD spake unto Gad, David's seer, saying,

021:010 Go and tell David, saying, Thus saith the LORD, I offer thee three things: choose thee one of them, that I may do it unto thee.

021:011 So Gad came to David, and said unto him, Thus saith the LORD, Choose thee

021:012 Either three years' famine; or three months to be destroyed before thy foes, while that the sword of thine enemies overtaketh thee; or else three days the sword of the LORD, even the pestilence, in the land, and the **angel of the LORD** destroying throughout all the coasts of Israel. Now therefore advise thyself what word I shall bring again to him that sent me.

021:013 And David said unto Gad, I am in a great strait: let me fall now into the hand of the LORD; for very great are his mercies: but let me not fall into the hand of man.

021:014 So the LORD sent pestilence upon Israel: and there fell of Israel seventy thousand men.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 021:015 And God sent an angel unto Jerusalem to destroy it: and as he was destroying, the LORD beheld, and he repented him of the evil, and said to the angel that destroyed, It is enough, stay now thine hand. And **the angel of the LORD** stood by the threshingfloor of Ornan the Jebusite.
- 021:016 And David lifted up his eyes, and saw **the angel of the LORD** stand between the earth and the heaven, having a drawn sword in his hand stretched out over Jerusalem. Then David and the elders of Israel, who were clothed in sackcloth, fell upon their faces.
- 021:017 And David said unto God, Is it not I that commanded the people to be numbered? even I it is that have sinned and done evil indeed; but as for these sheep, what have they done? let thine hand, I pray thee, O LORD my God, be on me, and on my father's house; but not on thy people, that they should be plagued.
- 021:018 Then **the angel of the LORD** commanded Gad to say to David, that David should go up, and set up an altar unto the LORD in the threshingfloor of Ornan the Jebusite.

## 1 Chronicles

- 021:030 But David could not go before it to enquire of God: for he was afraid because of the sword of **the angel of the LORD**

## Psalm

- 034:001 I will bless the LORD at all times: his praise shall continually be in my mouth.
- 034:002 My soul shall make her boast in the LORD: the humble shall hear thereof, and be glad.
- 034:003 O magnify the LORD with me, and let us exalt his name together.
- 034:004 I sought the LORD, and he heard me, and delivered me from all my fears.
- 034:005 They looked unto him, and were lightened: and their faces were not ashamed.
- 034:006 This poor man cried, and the LORD heard him, and saved him out of all his troubles.
- 034:007 **The angel of the LORD** encampeth round about them that fear him, and delivereth them.
- 034:008 O taste and see that the LORD is good: blessed is the man that trusteth in him.

## Psalm

- 035:001 Plead my cause, O LORD, with them that strive with me: fight against them that fight against me.
- 035:002 Take hold of shield and buckler, and stand up for mine help.
- 035:003 Draw out also the spear, and stop the way against them that persecute me: say unto my soul, I am thy salvation.
- 035:004 Let them be confounded and put to shame that seek after my soul: let them be turned back and brought to confusion that devise my hurt.
- 035:005 Let them be as chaff before the wind: and let **the angel of the LORD** chase them.
- 035:006 Let their way be dark and slippery: and let **the angel of the LORD** persecute them.
- 035:007 For without cause have they hid for me their net in a pit, which without cause they have digged for my soul.

## Isaiah

- 037:035 For I will defend this city to save it for mine own sake, and for my servant David's sake.
- 037:036 Then **the angel of the LORD** went forth, and smote in the camp of the Assyrians a hundred and fourscore and five thousand: and when they arose early in the morning, behold, they were all dead corpses.

## Zachariah

- 001:007 Upon the four and twentieth day of the eleventh month, which is the month Sebat, in the second year of Darius, came the word of the LORD unto Zechariah, the son of Berechiah, the son of Iddo the prophet, saying,

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 001:008 I saw by night, and behold a man riding upon a red horse, and he stood among the myrtle trees that were in the bottom; and behind him were there red horses, speckled, and white.
- 001:009 Then said I, O my lord, what are these? And the angel that talked with me said unto me, I will shew thee what these be.
- 001:010 And the man that stood among the myrtle trees answered and said, These are they whom the LORD hath sent to walk to and fro through the earth.
- 001:011 And they answered **the angel of the LORD** that stood among the myrtle trees, and said, We have walked to and fro through the earth, and, behold, all the earth sitteth still, and is at rest.
- 001:012 Then **the angel of the LORD** answered and said, O LORD of hosts, how long wilt thou not have mercy on Jerusalem and on the cities of Judah, against which thou hast had indignation these threescore and ten years?
- 001:013 And the LORD answered the angel that talked with me with good words and comfortable words.
- 001:014 So the angel that communed with me said unto me, Cry thou, saying, Thus saith the LORD of hosts; I am jealous for Jerusalem and for Zion with a great jealousy.

## Zachariah

- 003:001 And he shewed me Joshua the high priest standing before **the angel of the LORD**, and Satan standing at his right hand to resist him.
- 003:002 And the LORD said unto Satan, The LORD rebuke thee, O Satan; even the LORD that hath chosen Jerusalem rebuke thee: is not this a brand plucked out of the fire?
- 003:003 Now Joshua was clothed with filthy garments, and stood before the angel.
- 003:004 And he answered and spake unto those that stood before him, saying, Take away the filthy garments from him. And unto him he said, Behold, I have caused thine iniquity to pass from thee, and I will clothe thee with change of raiment.
- 003:005 And I said, Let them set a fair mitre upon his head. So they set a fair mitre upon his head, and clothed him with garments. And **the angel of the LORD** stood by.
- 003:006 And **the angel of the LORD** protested unto Joshua, saying,
- 003:007 Thus saith the LORD of hosts; If thou wilt walk in my ways, and if thou wilt keep my charge, then thou shalt also judge my house, and shalt also keep my courts, and I will give thee places to walk among these that stand by.

## Zechariah

- 012:008 In that day shall the LORD defend the inhabitants of Jerusalem; and he that is feeble among them at that day shall be as David; and the house of David shall be as God, as **the angel of the LORD** before them.
- 012:009 And it shall come to pass in that day, that I will seek to destroy all the nations that come against Jerusalem.
- 012:010 And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his firstborn.

## Matthew

- 001:018 Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost.
- 001:019 Then Joseph her husband, being a just man, and not willing to make her a publick example, was minded to put her away privily.
- 001:020 But while he thought on these things, behold, **the angel of the LORD** appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

001:021 And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.  
 001:022 Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying,  
 001:023 Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us.  
 001:024 Then Joseph being raised from sleep did as **the angel of the Lord** had bidden him, and took unto him his wife:  
 001:025 And knew her not till she had brought forth her firstborn son: and he called his name JESUS.

## Matthew

002:013 And when they were departed, behold, **the angel of the Lord** appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word: for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him.

## Matthew

028:001 In the end of the sabbath, as it began to dawn toward the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary to see the sepulchre.  
 028:002 And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for **the angel of the Lord** descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it.  
 028:003 His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow:  
 028:004 And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men.  
 028:005 And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, which was crucified.  
 028:006 He is not here: for he is risen, as he said. Come, see the place where the Lord lay.

## Luke

002:008 And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night.  
 002:009 And, lo, **the angel of the Lord** came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid.  
 002:010 And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people.  
 002:011 For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.  
 002:012 And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger.

## Acts

005:019 But **the angel of the Lord** by night opened the prison doors, and brought them forth, and said,  
 005:020 Go, stand and speak in the temple to the people all the words of this life.

## Acts

008:026 And **the angel of the Lord** spake unto Philip, saying, Arise, and go toward the south unto the way that goeth down from Jerusalem unto Gaza, which is desert.  
 008:027 And he arose and went: and, behold, a man of Ethiopia, an eunuch of great authority under Candace queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treasure, and had come to Jerusalem for to worship,

## Acts

012:005 Peter therefore was kept in prison: but prayer was made without ceasing of the church unto God for him.



## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 012:006 And when Herod would have brought him forth, the same night Peter was sleeping between two soldiers, bound with two chains: and the keepers before the door kept the prison.
- 012:007 And, behold, **the angel of the Lord** came upon him, and a light shined in the prison: and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him up, saying, Arise up quickly. And his chains fell off from his hands.
- 012:008 And the angel said unto him, Gird thyself, and bind on thy sandals. And so he did. And he saith unto him, Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me.
- 012:009 And he went out, and followed him; and wist not that it was true which was done by the angel; but thought he saw a vision.
- 012:010 When they were past the first and the second ward, they came unto the iron gate that leadeth unto the city; which opened to them of his own accord: and they went out, and passed on through one street; and forthwith the angel departed from him.

## Acts

- 012:021 And upon a set day Herod, arrayed in royal apparel, sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them.
- 012:022 And the people gave a shout, saying, It is the voice of a god, and not of a man.
- 012:023 And immediately **the angel of the Lord** smote him, because he gave not God the glory: and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the ghost.

## Jesus Declares He Is God, Part Of The Trinity

This may seem like a strange question. But there are some liberal Christians who say He is not. They say Jesus is divine. And they say Jesus never claimed to be God.

The section entitled “Jesus Was Not Created” should have enough bible quotes to convince anyone that the bible teaches Jesus is God, that is, part of the Trinity. However, for the skeptic, additional passages are included in this section. But not all passages are quoted because there are so many. So let’s look at some of them.

### Jesus Claims He Is Christ

The following bible passage is from the trial of Jesus. It is probably the most explicit statement by Jesus that He is God.

Mark

014:060 And the high priest stood up in the midst, and asked Jesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing? what is it which these witness against thee?

014:061 But he held his peace, and answered nothing. **Again the high priest asked him, and said unto him, Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed?**

014:062 **And Jesus said, I am: and ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.**

014:063 Then the high priest rent his clothes, and saith, What need we any further witnesses?

014:064 Ye have heard the blasphemy: what think ye? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death.

There are other passages too, such as the following one which is after when Jesus restored sight to a man who was blind from birth.

John

009:035 **Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God?**

009:036 He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him?

009:037 **And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee.**

009:038 And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.

The following is what Jesus said to the Samaritan woman at the well.

John

004:025 **The woman saith unto him, I know that Messias cometh, which is called Christ: when he is come, he will tell us all things.**

004:026 **Jesus saith unto her, I that speak unto thee am he.**

I suspect there were many other times when Jesus explicitly said He is the Christ, because the Gospels only record a sampling of His life, as it is written in

John

021:025 And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. Amen

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

Jesus Is In The Father

Jesus said several times that He and the Father are one, are in each other. The following are 2 such passages.

John

010:025 Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me.

010:026 But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.

010:027 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:

010:028 And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.

010:029 My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand.

010:030 **I and my Father are one.**

John

017:020 Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word;

017:021 That they all may be one; **as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee**, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.

017:022 And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that<sup>2</sup> they may be one, **even as we are one:**

017:023 **I in them, and thou in me**, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.

017:024 Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world.

017:025 O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee: but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me.

017:026 And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me may be in them, and I in them

The following passage does not state directly that Jesus and the Father are one. But notice the other things Jesus said that imply He and the Father are one.

John

005:017 But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work.

005:018 Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not only had broken the sabbath, but said also that God was his Father, making himself equal with God.

**005:019 Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise.**

**005:020 For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doeth: and he will shew him greater works than these, that ye may marvel.**

**005:021 For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth them; even so the Son quickeneth whom he will.**

**005:022 For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son:**

**005:023 That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the Father which hath sent him.**

005:024 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

005:025 Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live.

**005:026 For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself;**

**005:027 And hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man.**

**005:028 Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice,**

**005:029 And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.**

**005:030 I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.**

005:031 If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not true.

005:032 There is another that beareth witness of me; and I know that the witness which he witnesseth of me is true.

005:033 Ye sent unto John, and he bare witness unto the truth.

005:034 But I receive not testimony from man: but these things I say, that ye might be saved.

005:035 He was a burning and a shining light: and ye were willing for a season to rejoice in his light.

005:036 But I have greater witness than that of John: for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me.

**005:037 And the Father himself, which hath sent me, hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape.**

005:038 And ye have not his word abiding in you: for whom he hath sent, him ye believe not.

**005:039 Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me.**

005:040 And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life.

005:041 I receive not honour from men.

005:042 But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you.

005:043 I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive.

005:044 How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only?

005:045 Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust.

**005:046 For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me; for he wrote of me.**

**005:047 But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?**

### **Miracles Show Who Jesus Was**

Jesus did many miracles that are described in the bible. The reader can scan the gospels to see them. But notice what Jesus said about the miracles, that they declare who He is. Many 'liberal Christians' deny Jesus performed miracles because they do not believe what the bible says. But that is because they reject parts of the bible.

#### Matthew

011:001 And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

011:002 Now when John had heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples,

**011:003 And said unto him, Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another?**

**011:004 Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see:**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

011:005 **The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them.**

John

005:036 **But I have greater witness than that of John: for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me.**

There is more on this in the section entitled "The Miracle Controversy".

### Voice From Heaven

The bible records 2 occasions when a voice from heaven declared Him God.

Matthew

003:013 Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.

003:014 But John forbad him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?

003:015 And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him.

003:016 **And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him:**

003:017 **And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.**

Mark

009:001 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power.

009:002 And after six days Jesus taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them up into an high mountain apart by themselves: and he was transfigured before them.

009:003 And his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow; so as no fuller on earth can white them.

009:004 And there appeared unto them Elias with Moses: and they were talking with Jesus.

009:005 And Peter answered and said to Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

009:006 For he wist not what to say; for they were sore afraid.

009:007 **And there was a cloud that overshadowed them: and a voice came out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son: hear him.**

009:008 And suddenly, when they had looked round about, they saw no man any more, save Jesus only with themselves.

In addition to the passages above, angels in heaven declared Jesus God at His birth.

Luke

002:008 And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night.

002:009 And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid.

002:010 And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people.

002:011 **For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

002:012 And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger.

002:013 And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying,

002:014 Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men.

002:015 And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another,  
Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made  
known unto us.

**Declared God in Prophecy**

Notice that in the following prophecy

1. A special child would be born in Israel
2. It would be a male child
3. He would be God in human form

Isaiah

09:006 **For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.**

009:007 Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform

## Treasures in Heaven – Can You Take It With You?

“You can’t take it with you.” How many times have you heard that phrase? Sometimes seniors say it when they consider a purchase or a vacation, reasoning that if they have extra money, enjoy it rather than leaving it to their heirs. Or sometimes the phrase is used in the opposite way. People may be downsizing and say it to justify getting rid of things, reasoning that they will eventually lose all that they have when they die anyway.

But how much truth is there to this statement? For sure, you cannot take jewelry or precious metals like gold or silver to heaven. When a Christian dies, their spirit goes to be with the Lord and everything physical is left behind. And what good is gold even if it could be brought to heaven? Would anyone care about it?

But the bible teaches that there are different levels of rewards in heaven. Now how we live our lives on earth does not determine who goes to heaven as mentioned in the following passage.

Ephesians

002:008 For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God:

002:009 Not of works, lest any man should boast.

### Greatest Reward

Genesis

015:001 After these things the word of the LORD came unto Abram in a vision, saying, Fear not, Abram: **I am thy shield, and thy exceeding great reward.**

The greatest reward is for all those who believe in Jesus, who are born again.

### Rewards in Heaven

But the bible does state that there are different levels of reward in heaven based on how we live our lives on earth. Some of those passages include

Jeremiah

017:010 I the LORD search the heart, I try the reins, even **to give every man according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings.**

Matthew

005:010 Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

005:011 Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake.

005:012 Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: **for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.**

Matthew

005:017 Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil.

005:018 For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

005:019 **Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.**

Matthew

006:001 **Take heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven.**

006:002 Therefore when thou doest thine alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward.

006:003 But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth:

006:004 **That thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret himself shall reward thee openly.**

Matthew

006:016 Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward.

006:017 But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face;

006:018 **That thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.**

And it continues

Matthew

006:019 **Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal:**

006:020 **But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal:**

006:021 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

Proverbs

011:018 The wicked worketh a deceitful work: **but to him that soweth righteousness shall be a sure reward.**

The following refers to the Great Tribulation Period which is yet to come. But notice how this passage speaks of different rewards.

Matthew

010:041 **He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a prophet's reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man shall receive a righteous man's reward.**

010:042 **And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones a cup of cold water only in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.**

Matthew

016:024 Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

016:025 For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it.



## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

016:026 For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

016:027 For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; **and then he shall reward every man according to his works.**

In the following passage, Jesus does not say it is impossible for the wealthy to be converted/born-again. It, I believe, is saying that anyone who turns to God, must turn from sin. In this case, the sin is love of money. If one want to turn to Jesus, they must be willing to give up all for Him.

Matthew

019:016 And, behold, one came and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life?

019:017 And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is, God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments.

019:018 He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said, Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness,

019:019 Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

019:020 The young man saith unto him, All these things have I kept from my youth up: what lack I yet?

019:021 **Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come and follow me.**

019:022 But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful: for he had great possessions.

019:023 Then said Jesus unto his disciples, Verily I say unto you, That a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom of heaven.

019:024 **And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.**

019:025 When his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved?

019:026 **But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible.**

The following passage is one that speaks of society in the last days, although it can have application to us today.

Matthew

010:034 Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.

010:035 For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

010:036 And a man's foes shall be they of his own household.

010:037 **He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me.**

010:038 And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me.

010:039 He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it.

There are people who on hearing the gospel will not turn to God because doing so would cause problems with other family members. This is especially true in some Muslim and Hindu countries where converting to Christianity could cost a person their life.

Mark

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 009:038 And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, and he followeth not us: and we forbid him, because he followeth not us.
- 009:039 But Jesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man which shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me.
- 009:040 For he that is not against us is on our part.
- 009:041 **For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward.**

## Luke

- 006:022 Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from their company, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake.
- 006:023 **Rejoice ye in that day, and leap for joy: for, behold, your reward is great in heaven:** for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets.
- 006:024 But woe unto you that are rich! for ye have received your consolation.
- 006:025 Woe unto you that are full! for ye shall hunger. Woe unto you that laugh now! for ye shall mourn and weep.
- 006:026 Woe unto you, when all men shall speak well of you! for so did their fathers to the false prophets.
- 006:027 But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you,
- 006:028 Bless them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully use you.
- 006:029 And unto him that smiteth thee on the one cheek offer also the other; and him that taketh away thy cloak forbid not to take thy coat also.
- 006:030 Give to every man that asketh of thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods ask them not again.
- 006:031 And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise.
- 006:032 For if ye love them which love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also love those that love them.
- 006:033 And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same.
- 006:034 And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as much again.
- 006:035 **But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil.**

## 1 Corinthians

- 003:006 I have planted, Apollos watered; but God gave the increase.
- 003:007 So then neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth; but God that giveth the increase.
- 003:008 Now he that planteth and he that watereth are one: and **every man shall receive his own reward according to his own labour.**

## 1 Corinthians

- 003:009 For we are labourers together with God: ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building.
- 003:010 According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise masterbuilder, I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.
- 003:011 For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.
- 003:012 Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble;
- 003:013 **Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is.**
- 003:014 **If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward.**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

003:015 **If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire.**

## 2 Corinthians

005:010 For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; **that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.**

## 1 Timothy

006:017 Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not highminded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy;

006:018 That they do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, willing to communicate;

006:019 **Laying up in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternal life.**

## 2 Timothy

004:007 **I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith:**

004:008 **Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing.**

## 2 John

001:008 **Look to yourselves, that we lose not those things which we have wrought, but that we receive a full reward.**

## Revelation

002:010 Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be thou faithful unto death, and **I will give thee a crown of life.**

## Revelation

003:011 Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, **that no man take thy crown.**

## Revelation

004:004 And round about the throne were four and twenty seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and **they had on their heads crowns of gold.**

## Revelation

004:010 The four and twenty elders fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, **and cast their crowns before the throne, saying,**

004:011 **Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created**

From the above passages, we can clearly see that there are rewards in heaven (or lack of rewards) based on how we live our lives.

The bible also tells us that those who died without saving faith and go to hell, will be punished according to how they lived. And those who died in Christ will receive a reward based on how they lived. But where one goes depends on their faith.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

## Revelation

020:011 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them.

020:012 And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: **and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.**

020:013 And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and **they were judged every man according to their works.**

## Revelation

022:012 **And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be.**

Money

## Matthew

006:019 **Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal:**

006:020 **But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal:**

006:021 **For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.**

## Matthew

019:016 And, behold, one came and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life?

019:017 And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is, God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments.

019:018 He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said, Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness,

019:019 Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

019:020 The young man saith unto him, All these things have I kept from my youth up: what lack I yet?

019:021 **Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come and follow me.**

019:022 But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful: for he had great possessions.

019:023 Then said Jesus unto his disciples, Verily I say unto you, That a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom of heaven.

## Mark

010:017 And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?

010:018 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is, God.

010:019 Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Defraud not, Honour thy father and mother.

010:020 And he answered and said unto him, Master, all these have I observed from my youth.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

010:021 **Then Jesus beholding him loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest: go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, take up the cross, and follow me.**

010:022 And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved: for he had great possessions.

010:023 And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

Luke

012:016 And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully:

012:017 And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits?

012:018 And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods.

012:019 And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry.

012:020 But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided?

012:021 **So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.**

Luke

012:031 But rather seek ye the kingdom of God; and all these things shall be added unto you.

012:032 Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom.

012:033 **Sell that ye have, and give alms; provide yourselves bags which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth.**

012:034 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

Luke

018:018 And a certain ruler asked him, saying, Good Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?

018:019 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? none is good, save one, that is, God.

018:020 Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Honour thy father and thy mother.

018:021 And he said, All these have I kept from my youth up.

018:022 **Now when Jesus heard these things, he said unto him, Yet lackest thou one thing: sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me.**

018:023 And when he heard this, he was very sorrowful: for he was very rich.

018:024 And when Jesus saw that he was very sorrowful, he said, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

### Example Of God's Notice

Notice the following passage, especially verses 10-88. It may seem boring but it has an important message.

Numbers

007:001 And it came to pass on the day that Moses had fully set up the tabernacle, and had anointed it, and sanctified it, and all the instruments thereof, both the altar and all the vessels thereof, and had anointed them, and sanctified them;

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 007:002 That the princes of Israel, heads of the house of their fathers, who were the princes of the tribes, and were over them that were numbered, offered:
- 007:003 And they brought their offering before the LORD, six covered wagons, and twelve oxen; a wagon for two of the princes, and for each one an ox: and they brought them before the tabernacle.
- 007:004 And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying,
- 007:005 Take it of them, that they may be to do the service of the tabernacle of the congregation; and thou shalt give them unto the Levites, to every man according to his service.
- 007:006 And Moses took the wagons and the oxen, and gave them unto the Levites.
- 007:007 Two wagons and four oxen he gave unto the sons of Gershon, according to their service:
- 007:008 And four wagons and eight oxen he gave unto the sons of Merari, according unto their service, under the hand of Ithamar the son of Aaron the priest.
- 007:009 But unto the sons of Kohath he gave none: because the service of the sanctuary belonging unto them was that they should bear upon their shoulders.
- 007:010 And the princes offered for dedicating of the altar in the day that it was anointed, even the princes offered their offering before the altar.
- 007:011 And the LORD said unto Moses, They shall offer their offering, each prince on his day, for the dedicating of the altar.
- 007:012 And he that offered his offering the first day was Nahshon the son of Amminadab, of the tribe of Judah:
- 007:013 And his offering was one silver charger, the weight thereof was an hundred and thirty shekels, one silver bowl of seventy shekels, after the shekel of the sanctuary; both of them were full of fine flour mingled with oil for a meat offering:
- 007:014 One spoon of ten shekels of gold, full of incense:
- 007:015 One young bullock, one ram, one lamb of the first year, for a burnt offering:
- 007:016 One kid of the goats for a sin offering:
- 007:017 And for a sacrifice of peace offerings, two oxen, five rams, five he goats, five lambs of the first year: this was the offering of Nahshon the son of Amminadab.
- 007:018 On the second day Nethaneel the son of Zuar, prince of Issachar, did offer:
- 007:019 He offered for his offering one silver charger, the weight whereof was an hundred and thirty shekels, one silver bowl of seventy shekels, after the shekel of the sanctuary; both of them full of fine flour mingled with oil for a meat offering:
- 007:020 One spoon of gold of ten shekels, full of incense:
- 007:021 One young bullock, one ram, one lamb of the first year, for a burnt offering:
- 007:022 One kid of the goats for a sin offering:
- 007:023 And for a sacrifice of peace offerings, two oxen, five rams, five he goats, five lambs of the first year: this was the offering of Nethaneel the son of Zuar.
- 007:024 On the third day Eliab the son of Helon, prince of the children of Zebulun, did offer:
- 007:025 His offering was one silver charger, the weight whereof was an hundred and thirty shekels, one silver bowl of seventy shekels, after the shekel of the sanctuary; both of them full of fine flour mingled with oil for a meat offering:
- 007:026 One golden spoon of ten shekels, full of incense:
- 007:027 One young bullock, one ram, one lamb of the first year, for a burnt offering:
- 007:028 One kid of the goats for a sin offering:
- 007:029 And for a sacrifice of peace offerings, two oxen, five rams, five he goats, five lambs of the first year: this was the offering of Eliab the son of Helon.
- 007:030 On the fourth day Elizur the son of Shedeur, prince of the children of Reuben, did offer:

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 007:031 His offering was one silver charger of the weight of an hundred and thirty shekels, one silver bowl of seventy shekels, after the shekel of the sanctuary; both of them full of fine flour mingled with oil for a meat offering:
- 007:032 One golden spoon of ten shekels, full of incense:
- 007:033 One young bullock, one ram, one lamb of the first year, for a burnt offering:
- 007:034 One kid of the goats for a sin offering:
- 007:035 And for a sacrifice of peace offerings, two oxen, five rams, five he goats, five lambs of the first year: this was the offering of Elizur the son of Shedeur.
- 007:036 On the fifth day Shelumiel the son of Zurishaddai, prince of the children of Simeon, did offer:
- 007:037 His offering was one silver charger, the weight whereof was an hundred and thirty shekels, one silver bowl of seventy shekels, after the shekel of the sanctuary; both of them full of fine flour mingled with oil for a meat offering:
- 007:038 One golden spoon of ten shekels, full of incense:
- 007:039 One young bullock, one ram, one lamb of the first year, for a burnt offering:
- 007:040 One kid of the goats for a sin offering:
- 007:041 And for a sacrifice of peace offerings, two oxen, five rams, five he goats, five lambs of the first year: this was the offering of Shelumiel the son of Zurishaddai.
- 007:042 On the sixth day Eliasaph the son of Deuel, prince of the children of Gad, offered:
- 007:043 His offering was one silver charger of the weight of an hundred and thirty shekels, a silver bowl of seventy shekels, after the shekel of the sanctuary; both of them full of fine flour mingled with oil for a meat offering:
- 007:044 One golden spoon of ten shekels, full of incense:
- 007:045 One young bullock, one ram, one lamb of the first year, for a burnt offering:
- 007:046 One kid of the goats for a sin offering:
- 007:047 And for a sacrifice of peace offerings, two oxen, five rams, five he goats, five lambs of the first year: this was the offering of Eliasaph the son of Deuel.
- 007:048 On the seventh day Elishama the son of Ammihud, prince of the children of Ephraim, offered:
- 007:049 His offering was one silver charger, the weight whereof was an hundred and thirty shekels, one silver bowl of seventy shekels, after the shekel of the sanctuary; both of them full of fine flour mingled with oil for a meat offering:
- 007:050 One golden spoon of ten shekels, full of incense:
- 007:051 One young bullock, one ram, one lamb of the first year, for a burnt offering:
- 007:052 One kid of the goats for a sin offering:
- 007:053 And for a sacrifice of peace offerings, two oxen, five rams, five he goats, five lambs of the first year: this was the offering of Elishama the son of Ammihud.
- 007:054 On the eighth day offered Gamaliel the son of Pedahzur, prince of the children of Manasseh:
- 007:055 His offering was one silver charger of the weight of an hundred and thirty shekels, one silver bowl of seventy shekels, after the shekel of the sanctuary; both of them full of fine flour mingled with oil for a meat offering:
- 007:056 One golden spoon of ten shekels, full of incense:
- 007:057 One young bullock, one ram, one lamb of the first year, for a burnt offering:
- 007:058 One kid of the goats for a sin offering:
- 007:059 And for a sacrifice of peace offerings, two oxen, five rams, five he goats, five lambs of the first year: this was the offering of Gamaliel the son of Pedahzur.
- 007:060 On the ninth day Abidan the son of Gideoni, prince of the children of Benjamin, offered:

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 007:061 His offering was one silver charger, the weight whereof was an hundred and thirty shekels, one silver bowl of seventy shekels, after the shekel of the sanctuary; both of them full of fine flour mingled with oil for a meat offering:
- 007:062 One golden spoon of ten shekels, full of incense:
- 007:063 One young bullock, one ram, one lamb of the first year, for a burnt offering:
- 007:064 One kid of the goats for a sin offering:
- 007:065 And for a sacrifice of peace offerings, two oxen, five rams, five he goats, five lambs of the first year: this was the offering of Abidan the son of Gideon.
- 007:066 On the tenth day Ahiezer the son of Ammishaddai, prince of the children of Dan, offered:
- 007:067 His offering was one silver charger, the weight whereof was an hundred and thirty shekels, one silver bowl of seventy shekels, after the shekel of the sanctuary; both of them full of fine flour mingled with oil for a meat offering:
- 007:068 One golden spoon of ten shekels, full of incense:
- 007:069 One young bullock, one ram, one lamb of the first year, for a burnt offering:
- 007:070 One kid of the goats for a sin offering:
- 007:071 And for a sacrifice of peace offerings, two oxen, five rams, five he goats, five lambs of the first year: this was the offering of Ahiezer the son of Ammishaddai.
- 007:072 On the eleventh day Pagiel the son of Ocran, prince of the children of Asher, offered:
- 007:073 His offering was one silver charger, the weight whereof was an hundred and thirty shekels, one silver bowl of seventy shekels, after the shekel of the sanctuary; both of them full of fine flour mingled with oil for a meat offering:
- 007:074 One golden spoon of ten shekels, full of incense:
- 007:075 One young bullock, one ram, one lamb of the first year, for a burnt offering:
- 007:076 One kid of the goats for a sin offering:
- 007:077 And for a sacrifice of peace offerings, two oxen, five rams, five he goats, five lambs of the first year: this was the offering of Pagiel the son of Ocran.
- 007:078 On the twelfth day Ahira the son of Enan, prince of the children of Naphtali, offered:
- 007:079 His offering was one silver charger, the weight whereof was an hundred and thirty shekels, one silver bowl of seventy shekels, after the shekel of the sanctuary; both of them full of fine flour mingled with oil for a meat offering:
- 007:080 One golden spoon of ten shekels, full of incense:
- 007:081 One young bullock, one ram, one lamb of the first year, for a burnt offering:
- 007:082 One kid of the goats for a sin offering:
- 007:083 And for a sacrifice of peace offerings, two oxen, five rams, five he goats, five lambs of the first year: this was the offering of Ahira the son of Enan.
- 007:084 This was the dedication of the altar, in the day when it was anointed, by the princes of Israel: twelve chargers of silver, twelve silver bowls, twelve spoons of gold:
- 007:085 Each charger of silver weighing an hundred and thirty shekels, each bowl seventy: all the silver vessels weighed two thousand and four hundred shekels, after the shekel of the sanctuary:
- 007:086 The golden spoons were twelve, full of incense, weighing ten shekels apiece, after the shekel of the sanctuary: all the gold of the spoons was an hundred and twenty shekels.
- 007:087 All the oxen for the burnt offering were twelve bullocks, the rams twelve, the lambs of the first year twelve, with their meat offering: and the kids of the goats for sin offering twelve.
- 007:088 And all the oxen for the sacrifice of the peace offerings were twenty and four bullocks, the rams sixty, the he goats sixty, the lambs of the first year sixty. This was the dedication of the altar, after that it was anointed.



## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

Most people probably feel this is a rather boring passage. And what does it have to do with us today? It does not teach about sin or forgiveness. It teaches nothing new about God. It is not a story with a lesson behind it. So why is it there?

It may be boring, but notice that God felt these offerings were so important that they are recorded for all time. It shows us that what we do according to God's will, and what we give according to God's will is important. God notices. God remembers the good we have done.

**Loss of Reward**

The verses above (some repeated below) also teach us that God will judge our motives as to whether we will receive a reward.

*Are we doing things to be praised by people?*

Matthew

006:001 **Take heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven.**

006:002 Therefore when thou doest thine alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward.

006:003 But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth:

006:004 **That thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret himself shall reward thee openly.**

*Are we doing good things only for friends and relatives?*

Matthew

005:043 Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy.

005:044 But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you;

005:045 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust.

005:046 **For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same?**

005:047 **And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more than others? do not even the publicans so?**

Luke

006:031 And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise.

006:032 For if ye love them which love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also love those that love them.

006:033 **And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same.**

006:034 **And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as much again.**

006:035 **But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil.**

*Are we doing good things out of earthly desires or out of faith and love of God?*

1 Corinthians

003:001 And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, even as unto babes in Christ.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 003:002 I have fed you with milk, and not with meat: for hitherto ye were not able to bear it, neither yet now are ye able.
- 003:003 For ye are yet carnal: for whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk as men?
- 003:004 For while one saith, I am of Paul; and another, I am of Apollos; are ye not carnal?
- 003:005 Who then is Paul, and who is Apollos, but ministers by whom ye believed, even as the Lord gave to every man?
- 003:006 I have planted, Apollos watered; but God gave the increase.
- 003:007 So then neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth; but God that giveth the increase.
- 003:008 Now he that planteth and he that watereth are one: **and every man shall receive his own reward according to his own labour.**
- 003:009 For we are labourers together with God: ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building.
- 003:010 According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise masterbuilder, I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.
- 003:011 **For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.**
- 003:012 **Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble;**
- 003:013 **Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is.**
- 003:014 **If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward.**
- 003:015 **If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire.**

## Matthew

- 005:017 Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil.
- 005:018 For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.
- 005:019 **Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven:** but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.

## 1 Corinthians

- 009:024 Know ye not that they which run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run, that ye may obtain.
- 009:025 And every man that striveth for the mastery is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a corruptible crown; but we an incorruptible.
- 009:026 I therefore so run, not as uncertainly; so fight I, not as one that beateth the air:
- 009:027 **But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway.**

In the above passage, the end of verse 27, the NIV translation uses the phrase 'disqualified for the prize'. The idea being that a person could lose their reward.

Personal Sacrifice

## Matthew

- 019:027 Then answered Peter and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee; what shall we have therefore?

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

019:028 And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

019:029 **And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive an hundredfold, and shall inherit everlasting life.**

Persecution

Matthew

005:011 **Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake.**

005:012 **Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.**

Luke

006:022 **Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from their company, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake.**

006:023 **Rejoice ye in that day, and leap for joy: for, behold, your reward is great in heaven: for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets**

Afterlife In Heaven

John

003:001 Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not.

003:002 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.

1 Corinthians

015:042 So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption:

015:043 It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power:

015:044 It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body.

Revelation

021:006 And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely.

021:007 He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.

Colossians

003:023 And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the Lord, and not unto men;

003:024 Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ.

## How Big Is God?

This may seem like a strange question. But there are some who believe God is far off in heaven, who set up the world as a man would set a clock and then walk away. And there are some who have, mockingly, looked in a telescope into the heavens and say they cannot see Him. So it may be good to look at some bible verses about how big God is and where He is.

### Bigger Than The Universe

1 Kings

008:027 But will God indeed dwell on the earth? behold, **the heaven and heaven of heavens cannot contain thee**; how much less this house that I have builded?

King David spoke the above by inspiration of the Holy Spirit. The 'heaven of heavens' means the universe. So by this verse we know the universe cannot contain God. We know from science that the universe continues to expand at a faster and faster rate (the expansion is accelerating). Yet we know that no matter how far it expands, it will not contain God. God is bigger.

### God Is Everywhere

The following passage makes it clear that God is everywhere.

Psalms

139:007 **Whither shall I go from thy spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence?**

139:008 **If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, thou art there.**

139:009 **If I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea;**

139:010 **Even there shall thy hand lead me, and thy right hand shall hold me.**

139:011 If I say, Surely the darkness shall cover me; even the night shall be light about me.

139:012 Yea, the darkness hideth not from thee; but the night shineth as the day: the darkness and the light are both alike to thee.

## Mary and Joseph's Other Children

There are several bible passages which refer to "Mary and Joseph's other children". Those passages are below. Over the last 2 millennia there has been a debate who were these people. Some scholars believed they were cousins. Others believed Joseph had children from a previous marriage before he married Mary, although there is no evidence for this. The simplest, and probably best interpretation, is that Mary and Joseph had other children after Jesus. This is especially true because of Psalm 51 which is a prophecy of Jesus's early life. Notice the following passage in Psalm 51.

Psalm

069:007 Because for thy sake I have borne reproach; shame hath covered my face.

069:008 **I am become a stranger unto my brethren, and an alien unto my mother's children.**

The above passage makes it clear that Jesus's mother, Mary, had other children.

Now notice the following passage

Matthew

001:023 Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us.

001:024 Then Joseph being raised from sleep did as the angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his wife:

001:025 And knew her not till she had brought forth **her firstborn son**: and he called his name JESUS

Why would the passage state 'firstborn' unless there was another?

The following are New Testament references to Mary's other children.

Matthew

012:046 **While he yet talked to the people, behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him.**

012:047 **Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee.**

012:048 But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?

012:049 And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren!

012:050 For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

And this is also recorded in Mark's Gospel.

Mark

003:031 **There came then his brethren and his mother, and, standing without, sent unto him, calling him.**

003:032 **And the multitude sat about him, and they said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without seek for thee.**

003:033 And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren?

003:034 And he looked round about on them which sat about him, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren!

003:035 For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

And this is also recorded in Luke's Gospel.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

Luke

008:019 **Then came to him his mother and his brethren, and could not come at him for the press.**

008:020 **And it was told him by certain which said, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to see thee.**

008:021 And he answered and said unto them, My mother and my brethren are these which hear the word of God, and do it.

Matthew

013:053 And it came to pass, that when Jesus had finished these parables, he departed thence.

013:054 And when he was come into his own country, he taught them in their synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and said, Whence hath this man this wisdom, and these mighty works?

013:055 **Is not this the carpenter's son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas?**

013:056 **And his sisters, are they not all with us? Whence then hath this man all these things?**

013:057 And they were offended in him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, save in his own country, and in his own house.

013:058 And he did not many mighty works there because of their unbelief.

John

007:001 After these things Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Jewry, because the Jews sought to kill him.

007:002 Now the Jew's feast of tabernacles was at hand.

007:003 **His brethren therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Judaea, that thy disciples also may see the works that thou doest.**

007:004 **For there is no man that doeth any thing in secret, and he himself seeketh to be known openly. If thou do these things, shew thyself to the world.**

007:005 **For neither did his brethren believe in him.**

007:006 Then Jesus said unto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alway ready.

007:007 The world cannot hate you; but me it hateth, because I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil.

007:008 Go ye up unto this feast: I go not up yet unto this feast: for my time is not yet full come.

007:009 When he had said these words unto them, he abode still in Galilee.

007:010 **But when his brethren were gone up, then went he also up unto the feast, not openly, but as it were in secret.**

007:011 Then the Jews sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he?

## Mary Consented

Some people have stated God forced Mary to have Jesus. That is not true. Notice the following passage.

Luke

001:026 And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth,

001:027 To a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name was Mary.

001:028 And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail, thou that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women.

001:029 And when she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this should be.

001:030 And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found favour with God.

001:031 And, behold, **thou shalt conceive in thy womb**, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name JESUS.

001:032 He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David:

001:033 And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end.

001:034 Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?

001:035 And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God.

001:036 And, behold, thy cousin Elisabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age: and this is the sixth month with her, who was called barren.

001:037 For with God nothing shall be impossible.

001:038 **And Mary said, Behold the handmaid of the Lord; be it unto me according to thy word. And the angel departed from her.**

Notice in verse 31, the angel said Mary would conceive. She was not yet pregnant. Then in verse 38, Mary consents.

## Trials / Problems

There are several basic principles about the trials and problems we encounter in our lives. Some come from the fact many in the world reject God. Some come from challenges God presents us in our lives to make us better Christians. And some are the results of our sin.

God even warns us that ALL who live godly lives in Jesus will suffer persecution in a world that rejects, hates God. Paul wrote

2 Timothy

003:012 **Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.**

003:013 But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.

003:014 But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned and hast been assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learned them;

003:015 And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus.

003:016 All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:

003:017 That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works

And Peter confirmed this when he wrote

1 Peter

004:012 **Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you:**

004:013 But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings; that, when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy.

004:014 If ye be reproached for the name of Christ, happy are ye; for the spirit of glory and of God resteth upon you: on their part he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

004:015 But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or as a thief, or as an evildoer, or as a busybody in other men's matters.

004:016 Yet if any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed; but let him glorify God on this behalf.

004:017 For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God: and if it first begin at us, what shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God?

004:018 And if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear?

004:019 Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God commit the keeping of their souls to him in well doing, as unto a faithful Creator

So, persecution is a common thing. These persecutions can be flagrant like a baker being prosecuted in court for not baking cakes for a gay wedding. Or it can be more subtle like the teaching of anti-Christian morality in public schools. Jesus explained the reason for this as

John

015:018 **If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you.**

015:019 **If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.**



## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

015:020 Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also.

015:021 But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake,<sup>2</sup> because they know not him that sent me.

There is always a cost for being a Christian. If one is a true Christian, they will want to live a more godly life. It can mean losing some friends or relationships with family and relatives, depending on the situation. In some cases, in some places in the world, it can even mean risking one's life. One common price is that Christians often receive ridicule and hate speech from a society bent on turning society into that of Sodom and Gomorrah. Or having news and entertainment programs that promote such behaviors. But this is what Jesus has told us in

Mark

008:034 And when he had called the people unto him with his disciples also, he said unto them, **Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.**

008:035 For whosoever will save his life shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's, the same shall save it.

008:036 For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?

008:037 Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

008:038 Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels

But some of our trials and problems are there to make us better people. Jesus taught that just like fruit bearing branches are pruned to being more fruit, so God sets before us situations which cause us to produce more/better good works.

John

015:001 I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.

015:002 Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: **and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.**

015:003 Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you.

015:004 Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

015:005 I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.

015:006 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

There are several passages which talk about God refining His own like one would refine gold or silver. The following are from passages regarding the last days. But it is analogous to us today.

Zechariah

013:009 **And I will bring the third part through the fire, and will refine them as silver is refined, and will try them as gold is tried: they shall call on my name, and I will hear them: I will say, It is my people: and they shall say, The LORD is my God**

Malachi

003:002 But who may abide the day of his coming? and who shall stand when he appeareth? for he is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' soap:

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

003:003 **And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the LORD an offering in righteousness.**

But some of the problems/trials we face are God's chastisement for sin in our lives. When this happens, the best thing is for us to repent and draw closer to God.

## Hebrews

012:005 And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, **My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him:**

012:006 **For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth.**

012:007 If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not?

012:008 But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons.

012:009 Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live?

012:010 For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness.

012:011 **Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.**

012:012 Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees;

And the bible gives us a warning that some of our 'trials and problems' are caused by our own lusts.

## James

001:012 **Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him.**

001:013 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth he any man:

001:014 **But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed.**

001:015 Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death.

001:016 **Do not err, my beloved brethren.**

## 2 Corinthians

001:003 Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and **the God of all comfort;**

001:004 **Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God.**

001:005 **For as the sufferings of Christ abound in us, so our consolation also aboundeth by Christ.**

001:006 And whether we be afflicted, it is for your consolation and salvation, which is effectual in the enduring of the same sufferings which we also suffer: or whether we be comforted, it is for your consolation and salvation.

001:007 And our hope of you is stedfast, knowing, that as ye are partakers of the sufferings, so shall ye be also of the consolation.

001:008 For we would not, brethren, have you ignorant of our trouble which came to us in Asia, that we were pressed out of measure, above strength, insomuch that we despaired even of life:

001:009 But we had the sentence of death in ourselves, that we should not trust in ourselves, but in God which raiseth the dead:

## Who Wrote the New Testament?

This writer accepts the traditional list of writers of the New Testament. However, some scholars disagree with the traditional list. This writer is not going to discuss the authorship of each of the books. Instead, this writer only wants to point out some of the logic errors of some scholars.

Some rejected the authorship of John to St John, claiming Acts 4:13 shows he was 'unlearned'.

Acts

004:001 **And as they spake unto the people, the priests, and the captain of the temple, and the Sadducees, came upon them,**

004:002 Being grieved that they taught the people, and preached through Jesus the resurrection from the dead.

004:003 And they laid hands on them, and put them in hold unto the next day: for it was now eventide.

004:004 Howbeit many of them which heard the word believed; and the number of the men was about five thousand.

004:005 And it came to pass on the morrow, that their rulers, and elders, and scribes,

004:006 And Annas the high priest, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the high priest, were gathered together at Jerusalem.

004:007 And when they had set them in the midst, they asked, By what power, or by what name, have ye done this?

004:008 Then Peter, filled with the Holy Ghost, said unto them, Ye rulers of the people, and elders of Israel,

004:009 If we this day be examined of the good deed done to the impotent man, by what means he is made whole;

004:010 Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you whole.

004:011 This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner.

004:012 Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.

004:013 **Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled;** and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.

004:014 And beholding the man which was healed standing with them, they could say nothing against it.

004:015 But when they had commanded them to go aside out of the council, they conferred among themselves,

004:016 Saying, What shall we do to these men? for that indeed a notable miracle hath been done by them is manifest to all them that dwell in Jerusalem; and we cannot deny it.

It is clear that was the opinion of "the priests, and the captain of the temple, and the Sadducees" because they did not have formal rabbinic education according to the customs and standards of that time. And noticed how they marveled, apparently because the apostles clearly were knowledgeable and intelligent. So, this is not conclusive proof John and Peter were unschooled.

So is there any evidence that St John wrote John? Well, Papias was the Bishop of Hierapolis and author who lived between about 60AD and 130AD. According to Professor Tischendorf, he saw a manuscript in the Vatican library with a quotation from Papias that St John was the author. Also, Clement of Alexandria, who lived from about 150AD to 215AD, wrote that John was persuaded by friends and motivated by the Holy Spirit to write a gospel. Clement was a Christian theologian who taught at the Catechetical School of Alexandria. So it seems likely St John wrote the gospel of his name.

Many of these same scholars also claim that Peter was not written by St Peter, for similar reasons. But notice the salutations at the beginning of 1 Peter and 2 Peter.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

## 1 Peter

01:001 **Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the strangers scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia,**

## 2 Peter

001:001 **Simon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us through the righteousness of God and our Saviour Jesus Christ:**

001:002 Grace and peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord,

In both books, Peter clearly identifies himself as the author. Yes, it is possible that he dictated them to a scribe. Or he could have written them in his own hand. But it is clear that it is Peter the apostle who wrote them. Now there are scholars who say that the author was not really Peter, but someone else, based on Acts 4:13. But as mentioned before, that passage is referring to traditional rabbinical training. Worse still is rejecting Peter as the author means that there would be an error in the bible, which is not true (see the chapter entitled, "Interpreting the Bible, Bible Is Inerrant" in the other book on this website regarding Biblical Teaching Regarding Government).

Denying Peter wrote those books reminds me of the story of how Adam and Eve fell into sin. And what was their first sin? Doubting God.

## Genesis

003:001 Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?

003:002 **And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden:**

003:003 **But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die.**

003:004 **And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die:**

003:005 **For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.**

003:006 And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.

003:007 **And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons.**

So, in the same way these scholars who deny Peter wrote 1 & 2 Peter raise doubts on the accuracy of the bible. They are saying that there are flaws in the bible, it is not fully trustworthy, don't trust God or His word. That is wrong.

And a similar claim is made by these scholars on some of the books of Paul. Remember, each of them is an epistle, or letter. Let's look at the salutation in each.

## Romans

001:001 **Paul, a servant of Jesus Christ, called to be an apostle,** separated unto the gospel of God,

## 1 Corinthians

001:001 **Paul called to be an apostle of Jesus Christ through the will of God, and Sosthenes our brother,**

001:002 Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both their's and our's:

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

## 2 Corinthians

001:001 **Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timothy our brother,** unto the church of God which is at Corinth, with all the saints which are in all Achaia:

## Galatians

001:001 **Paul, an apostle, (not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead;)**

001:002 **And all the brethren which are with me, unto the churches of Galatia:**

## Ephesians

001:001 **Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus,** and to the faithful in Christ Jesus:

## Philemon

001:001 **Paul and Timotheus, the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus which are at Philippi,** with the bishops and deacons:

## Colossians

001:001 **Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timotheus our brother,**

001:002 To the saints and faithful brethren in Christ which are at Colosse: Grace be unto you, and peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

## 1 Thessalonians

001:001 **Paul, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Thessalonians** which is in God the Father and in the Lord Jesus Christ: Grace be unto you, and peace, from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

## 2 Thessalonians

001:001 **Paul, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Thessalonians** in God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ:

## 1 Timothy

001:001 **Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the commandment of God our Saviour, and Lord Jesus Christ, which is our hope;**

001:002 Unto Timothy, my own son in the faith: Grace, mercy, and peace, from God our Father and Jesus Christ our Lord.

## 2 Timothy

001:001 **Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, according to the promise of life which is in Christ Jesus,**

001:002 To Timothy, my dearly beloved son: Grace, mercy, and peace, from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.

## Titus

01:001 **Paul, a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, according to the faith of God's elect,** and the acknowledging of the truth which is after godliness;

001:002 In hope of eternal life, which God, that cannot lie, promised before the world began;

001:003 But hath in due times manifested his word through preaching, which is committed unto me according to the commandment of God our Saviour;

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

001:004 To Titus, mine own son after the common faith: Grace, mercy, and peace, from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour.

Philemon

001:001 **Paul, a prisoner of Jesus Christ, and Timothy our brother**, unto Philemon our dearly beloved, and fellowlabourer,

001:002 And to our beloved Apphia, and Archippus our fellowsoldier, and to the church in thy house:

And as with the epistles of Peter, to deny Paul wrote them is to say there are errors in the bible, which cannot be.

Another way people could identify Paul's writings is by the fact Paul wrote the salutation in the letter by his own hand. This implies that Paul may have dictated his letter to another, and then wrote the salutation himself. Notice in the passage below, Paul said he always wrote the salutation himself – in his own handwriting. Of course, when the epistles were copied, the copies did not have Paul's handwriting in them. But this is how we know Paul wrote the originals.

2 Thessalonians

003:016 Now the Lord of peace himself give you peace always by all means. The Lord be with you all.

003:017 **The salutation of Paul with mine own hand, which is the token in every epistle: so I write.**

003:018 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen

Many believe Hebrews was written by Paul. However, the human authorship is uncertain. One certain thing is it was written by inspiration of the Holy Spirit.

The point in all of this is that many of these scholars reject the bible as being accurate and therefore should be ignored. Remember, the scribes and Pharisees were the biblical scholars of their day and they were not as knowledgeable as they thought. Notice what Jesus said in one passage.

Matthew

023:001 **Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,**

023:002 **Saying The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat:**

023:003 **All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not.**

023:004 For they bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay them on men's shoulders; but they themselves will not move them with one of their fingers.

023:005 But all their works they do for to be seen of men: they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments,

023:006 And love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues,

023:007 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.

023:008 But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, even Christ; and all ye are brethren.

023:009 And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven.

023:010 Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, even Christ.

023:011 But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant.

023:012 And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased; and he that shall humble himself shall be exalted.

023:013 **But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 023:014 **Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation.
- 023:015 **Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves.
- 023:016 **Woe unto you, ye blind guides,** which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor!
- 023:017 **Ye fools and blind:** for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold?
- 023:018 And, Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty.
- 023:019 **Ye fools and blind:** for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift?
- 023:020 Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.
- 023:021 And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.
- 023:022 And he that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.
- 023:023 **Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** for ye pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.
- 023:024 **Ye blind guides,** which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel.
- 023:025 **Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess.
- 023:026 **Thou blind Pharisee,** cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.
- 023:027 **Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness.
- 023:028 Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.
- 023:029 **Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous,
- 023:030 And say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.
- 023:031 Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets.
- 023:032 Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.
- 023:033 **Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?**
- 023:034 Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes: and some of them ye shall kill and crucify; and some of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them from city to city:
- 023:035 That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zacharias son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar.
- 023:036 Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation.
- 023:037 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not!
- 023:038 Behold, your house is left unto you desolate.
- 023:039 For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord

---

Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

Point is, having a doctorate, a professorship, being called a scholar is meaningless if one does not have the Holy Spirit as a guide, and should be ignored. This writer is not claiming a full indwelling of the Spirit. But the Spirit confirmed in his heart that the bible is real and trustworthy.



## Did Jesus Perform Miracles?

The short answer is, yes, of course Jesus performed miracles. But there are many 'liberal' Christians who do not.

### Some Doubt the Miracles Reported in the Bible

There are many people who doubt the stories of miracles in the bible, and try to explain them away by natural means.

For example, the do not believe the story of Noah and the flood. Others say the flood was really a great lake or sea held in place by a earthen dam. The earthen dam gave way causing a flood.

People have also tried to explain away the 10 Plagues of Egypt. For example, some say the Nile River became red when there was flooding which brought red earth into it.

People have also questioned the Star of Bethlehem. They try to explain it away as a nova or a confluence of some planets. But there was no visible nova in the sky at the time of Jesus's birth around 4BC. And neither was there a confluence of planets at that time. So they dismiss the story as false.

They have also challenged the miracles performed by Jesus, saying either the stories are false, or they try to explain them away.

As a result, many good Christians today are also looking into ways trying to explain away, by natural means, the miracles in the bible, especially those of Jesus. And this has become a dangerous trend. So let us look at this in more detail, especially in regards to Jesus's miracles. The entire topic could cover several books. But let's just do an overview of key points.

First, let's look at Jesus's miracles.

### Did Jesus Have The Power To Do Miracles?

The first question to be asked is, did Jesus have the power, the ability to do miracles? Notice the following passage.

John

001:001 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

001:002 The same was in the beginning with God.

001:003 All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made.

001:004 In him was life; and the life was the light of men.

Being God, having created everything including the stars, the planets, and everything on earth, one has to say 'yes, Jesus had the power to do miracles. If He did not, then how could He have created the universe? Miracles are so tiny by comparison.

### The Miracles Show Us That Jesus Is God

Some say it is not important to believe Jesus did miracles. Well, that is true for young Christians who do not know the bible stories. But it is dangerous to know the stories of miracles and then to deny they are miracles because in doing so, one would be doubting God's word, the bible. And there is a second reason. Jesus's miracles are a testimony that Jesus is God, because only God can do such things. And even Jesus pointed out to people of His day that they can believe His is the Christ, the Messiah, because of them.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

Matthew

011:001 And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

011:002 Now when John had heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples,

011:003 And said unto him, Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another?

011:004 **Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see:**

011:005 **The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them.**

Luke

007:019 And John calling unto him two of his disciples sent them to Jesus, saying, Art thou he that should come? Or look we for another?

007:020 When the men were come unto him, they said, John Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that should come? Or look we for another?

007:021 **And in that same hour he cured many of their infirmities and plagues, and of evil spirits; and unto many that were blind he gave sight.**

007:022 **Then Jesus answering said unto them, Go your way, and tell John what things ye have seen and heard; how that the blind see, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, to the poor the gospel is preached.**

John

010:037 **If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not.**

010:038 **But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in me, and I in him.**

John

014:009 Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father?

014:010 Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works.

014:011 **Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake.**

014:012 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father.

014:013 And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son.

Let's take a look again at the passage in John 10, but in more detail. The passage is below in full its full context.

John

010:019 **There was a division therefore again among the Jews for these sayings.**

010:020 **And many of them said, He hath a devil, and is mad; why hear ye him?**

010:021 **Others said, These are not the words of him that hath a devil. Can a devil open the eyes of the blind?**

010:022 And it was at Jerusalem the feast of the dedication, and it was winter.

010:023 And Jesus walked in the temple in Solomon's porch.

010:024 **Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, How long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly.**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 010:025 **Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me.**
- 010:026 **But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.**
- 010:027 **My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:**
- 010:028 And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.
- 010:029 My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand.
- 010:030 I and my Father are one.
- 010:031 Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him.
- 010:032 **Jesus answered them, Many good works have I shewed you from my Father; for which of those works do ye stone me?**
- 010:033 **The Jews answered him, saying, For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy; and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God.**
- 010:034 Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods?
- 010:035 If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken;
- 010:036 Say ye of him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God?
- 010:037 **If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not.**
- 010:038 **But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in me, and I in him.**
- 010:039 Therefore they sought again to take him: but he escaped out of their hand,
- 010:040 And went away again beyond Jordan into the place where John at first baptized; and there he abode.
- 010:041 **And many resorted unto him, and said, John did no miracle: but all things that John spake of this man were true.**
- 010:042 **And many believed on him there**

Notice verses 19-21. Many Jews were unsure who Jesus was. So in verse 24-27, they asked Jesus and Jesus replies that His works, His miracles, speak of who He is. He adds that those who do not believe He is God are not among the elect (see section on predestination). Those people lack discernment. Notice in verses 32-33, the Jews did not deny Jesus performed miracles. Now notice verses 41-42, many Jews believed because of His works.

One more note on this passage. In verse 24 the Jews asked Jesus to tell them plainly if He was the Christ. There are several places in the Gospel where Jesus did tell one person or a small group plainly He is the Christ. But not to the general public. He drew people to Him thru His miracles and teaching.

### **Jesus Miracles – The Fulfillment of Prophecy**

It was necessary for Jesus to do miracles to fulfill prophecy. One is

Isaiah

- 035:005 **Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped.**
- 035:006 **Then shall the lame man leap as an hart, and the tongue of the dumb sing: for in the wilderness shall waters break out, and streams in the desert.**

If one reads the complete passage in Isaiah 35, one interpretation is that this is to be fulfilled in the end times. That is true. But it also had relevance to Jesus's ministry as shown in the following passage

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

Matthew

011:001 And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

011:002 Now when John had heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples,

011:003 And said unto him, Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another?

011:004 **Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see:**

011:005 **The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them.**

The following is another prophecy of Jesus's ministry.

Isaiah

053:004 Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted.

053:005 **But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities:** the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed.

The following passage confirms Jesus fulfilled this prophecy

Matthew

008:014 And when Jesus was come into Peter's house, he saw his wife's mother laid, and sick of a fever.

008:015 And he touched her hand, and the fever left her: and she arose, and ministered unto them.

008:016 When the even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the spirits with his word, and healed all that were sick:

008:017 **That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses.**

### No One Denied Jesus's Miracles Who Witnessed Them

It is interesting that today there are some people who deny Jesus ever performed a miracle. There are some today who try to explain away Jesus's miracles as being natural phenomena, or a magic trick.

So, let's look at the stories and see what others said who actually witnessed them. Remember, the 4 Gospels were written by 4 different people, 4 different witnesses. This write-up will not list every miraculous story, but just a sampling.

In this first story, Jesus heals a man who was blind since birth. If you ever met such a person, you know their eyes often look different from those who can see. Notice in this story, the man said he was blind, his neighbors testified the man was blind, and even the parents testified that their son was born blind. So, there are many witnesses to the fact that the man was blind. And after Jesus healed him, that same group of witnesses testified that he was healed and could see. None claimed it was a magic trick. None claimed it was a natural phenomena. Yes, there were a few refused to believe and dismissed it as a case of mistaken identity. But most accepted the fact the man was healed. Now notice verse 16. Many of the Pharisees stated was not of God – implying Jesus got His power from the devil. *The Pharisees did not deny the miracle. They said Jesus's power was not from God.*

John

009:001 **And as Jesus passed by, he saw a man which was blind from his birth.**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 009:002 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind?
- 009:003 Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.
- 009:004 I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work.
- 009:005 As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.
- 009:006 When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay,
- 009:007 **And said unto him, Go, wash in the pool of Siloam, (which is by interpretation, Sent.) He went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing.**
- 009:008 **The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seen him that he was blind, said, Is not this he that sat and begged?**
- 009:009 Some said, This is he: others said, He is like him: but he said, I am he.
- 009:010 Therefore said they unto him, How were thine eyes opened?
- 009:011 He answered and said, A man that is called Jesus made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash: and I went and washed, and I received sight.
- 009:012 Then said they unto him, Where is he? He said, I know not.
- 009:013 They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blind.
- 009:014 And it was the sabbath day when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes.
- 009:015 **Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see.**
- 009:016 **Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the sabbath day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such miracles? And there was a division among them.**
- 009:017 They say unto the blind man again, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, He is a prophet.
- 009:018 **But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and received his sight, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight.**
- 009:019 **And they asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? how then doth he now see?**
- 009:020 **His parents answered them and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind:**
- 009:021 **But by what means he now seeth, we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not: he is of age; ask him: he shall speak for himself.**
- 009:022 These words spake his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue.
- 009:023 Therefore said his parents, He is of age; ask him.
- 009:024 **Then again called they the man that was blind, and said unto him, Give God the praise: we know that this man is a sinner.**
- 009:025 **He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see.**
- 009:026 Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?
- 009:027 He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples?
- 009:028 Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple; but we are Moses' disciples.
- 009:029 We know that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is.
- 009:030 **The man answered and said unto them, Why herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes.**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 009:031 **Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth.**
- 009:032 **Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind.**
- 009:033 **If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.**
- 009:034 They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.
- 009:035 **Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God?**
- 009:036 **He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him?**
- 009:037 **And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee.**
- 009:038 And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.
- 009:039 And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind.
- 009:040 And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also?
- 009:041 Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth

Another great testimony is in the book of Matthew

Matthew

- 012:022 **Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blind, and dumb: and he healed him, insomuch that the blind and dumb both spake and saw.**
- 012:023 **And all the people were amazed, and said, Is not this the son of David?**
- 012:024 **But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This fellow doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils.**
- 012:025 And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand:
- 012:026 And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand?
- 012:027 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges.
- 012:028 But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you.
- 012:029 Or else how can one enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man? and then he will spoil his house.
- 012:030 He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth abroad.
- 012:031 Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men.
- 012:032 And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come.
- 012:033 Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by his fruit.
- 012:034 O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.
- 012:035 A good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treasure bringeth forth evil things.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

012:036 But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment.

012:037 For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

First, notice verse 22. It says, “Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blind, and dumb”, meaning the people knew the man, and knew his problems. It was not some sort of trick set up by Jesus or his disciples. This person was known in the area. And then Jesus healed him. Does the story say anyone challenged Jesus’s healing? Did anyone say the man was still blind, still unable to talk, still had a devil possess him? No. Not even Jesus’s enemies, the Pharisees, challenge the validity of Jesus’s healing. Instead, the Pharisees challenged where Jesus got His power to heal.

And this same kind of incident was repeated. Once again, in the following passage, multitudes and Jesus’s enemies, the Pharisees, did not deny the miracle.

Matthew

009:032 **As they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumb man possessed with a devil.**

009:033 **And when the devil was cast out, the dumb spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel.**

009:034 **But the Pharisees said, He casteth out devils through the prince of the devils.**

God also gave the power to heal to the apostles after Jesus returned to heaven. And once again, none who witnessed one of those healings denied it was a miracle.

Acts

004:006 **And Annas the high priest, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the high priest, were gathered together at Jerusalem.**

004:007 And when they had set them in the midst, they asked, By what power, or by what name, have ye done this?

004:008 Then Peter, filled with the Holy Ghost, said unto them, Ye rulers of the people, and elders of Israel,

004:009 If we this day be examined of the good deed done to the impotent man, by what means he is made whole;

004:010 Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you whole.

004:011 This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner.

004:012 Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.

004:013 Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled; and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.

004:014 **And beholding the man which was healed standing with them, they could say nothing against it.**

004:015 But when they had commanded them to go aside out of the council, they conferred among themselves,

004:016 Saying, What shall we do to these men? **for that indeed a notable miracle hath been done by them is manifest to all them that dwell in Jerusalem; and we cannot deny it.**

004:017 But that it spread no further among the people, let us straitly threaten them, that they speak henceforth to no man in this name.

004:018 And they called them, and commanded them not to speak at all nor teach in the name of Jesus.

004:019 But Peter and John answered and said unto them, Whether it be right in the sight of God to hearken unto you more than unto God, judge ye.

004:020 For we cannot but speak the things which we have seen and heard.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

004:021 So when they had further threatened them, they let them go, finding nothing how they might punish them, because of the people: for all men glorified God for that which was done.

004:022 **For the man was above forty years old, on whom this miracle of healing was shewed.**

Witnesses to the Miracles

Acts

010:034 Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons:

010:035 But in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him.

010:036 The word which God sent unto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ: (he is Lord of all:)

010:037 That word, I say, ye know, which was published throughout all Judaea, and began from Galilee, after the baptism which John preached;

010:038 How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with him.

010:039 **And we are witnesses of all things which he did both in the land of the Jews, and in Jerusalem; whom they slew and hanged on a tree:**

010:040 **Him God raised up the third day, and shewed him openly;**

010:041 **Not to all the people, but unto witnesses chosen before God, even to us, who did eat and drink with him after he rose from the dead.**

010:042 And he commanded us to preach unto the people, and to testify that it is he which was ordained of God to be the Judge of quick and dead.

010:043 **To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins.**

010:044 While Peter yet spake these words, the Holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.

010:045 And they of the circumcision which believed were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was poured out the gift of the Holy Ghost.

010:046 For they heard them speak with tongues, and magnify God. Then answered Peter,

010:047 Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which have received the Holy Ghost as well as we?

010:048 And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certain days

2 Peter

001:015 **Moreover I will endeavour that ye may be able after my decease to have these things always in remembrance.**

001:016 **For we have not followed cunningly devised fables, when we made known unto you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eyewitnesses of his majesty.**

001:017 For he received from God the Father honour and glory, when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glory, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

001:018 And this voice which came from heaven we heard, when we were with him in the holy mount.

Rejecting Miracles Was Prophesied

The miracles Jesus performed were a sign that He was the Christ, the Messiah, God in human form who is our savior. But some people in Jesus time, even those who witnessed the miracles first hand, rejected Jesus as the Messiah. They did not deny miracles were performed. But they denied by what power Jesus did the miracles.



## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

John

012:037 **But though he had done so many miracles before them, yet they believed not on him:**

012:038 **That the saying of Esaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake, Lord, who hath believed our report? and to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed?**

012:039 **Therefore they could not believe, because that Esaias said again,**

012:040 **He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart; that they should not see with their eyes, nor understand with their heart, and be converted, and I should heal them.**

012:041 **These things said Esaias, when he saw his glory, and spake of him.**

012:042 Nevertheless among the chief rulers also many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess him, lest they should be put out of the synagogue:

012:043 For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God.

For completeness, the 2 prophecies referenced in the passage above are below.

Isaiah

053:001 **Who hath believed our report? and to whom is the arm of the LORD revealed?**

053:002 For he shall grow up before him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: he hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him.

053:003 He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not.

053:004 Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted.

053:005 **But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed.**

053:006 All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all.

053:007 He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth.

053:008 He was taken from prison and from judgment: and who shall declare his generation? for he was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgression of my people was he stricken.

053:009 And he made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death; because he had done no violence, neither was any deceit in his mouth.

053:010 Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise him; he hath put him to grief: when thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in his hand.

053:011 He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities.

053:012 Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he hath poured out his soul unto death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors

Isaiah

006:008 Also I heard the voice of the Lord, saying, Whom shall I send, and who will go for us? Then said I, Here am I; send me.

006:009 **And he said, Go, and tell this people, Hear ye indeed, but understand not; and see ye indeed, but perceive not.**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 006:010 **Make the heart of this people fat, and make their ears heavy, and shut their eyes; lest they see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and convert, and be healed.**
- 006:011 Then said I, Lord, how long? And he answered, Until the cities be wasted without inhabitant, and the houses without man, and the land be utterly desolate,
- 006:012 And the LORD have removed men far away, and there be a great forsaking in the midst of the land.

Isaiah was being sent to the nation of Israel which turned its back on God and turned to idols. Isaiah was to teach God's way to them, making them accountable for their sins. God knew that thru teaching, the people would be forced to make a choice and that these people would reject Him and cause them to harden their hearts. When people are forced to make a choice, they 'harden' their hearts to the alternative which they reject. That, I believe, is the thought here. Then John makes it clear that this prophecy applied to the people at the time of Jesus. And it applied to us today. *In the same way, by Jesus performing miracles, He was forcing people to make a choice – that He is the Messiah, God who took on human form, or is not.* And this same challenge/decision is being forced on each of us today. If you believe in Jesus, you accept what the bible teaches about Him. If you reject Jesus and the miracles He performed, then you are as Isaiah wrote.

**Jesus Performed Many More Miracles Than Those Recorded in the Bible**

Matthew

- 004:023 **And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people.**
- 004:024 And his fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatick, and those that had the palsy; and he healed them.
- 004:025 And there followed him great multitudes of people from Galilee, and from Decapolis, and from Jerusalem, and from Judaea, and from beyond Jordan.

Matthew

- 008:016 **When the even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the spirits with his word, and healed all that were sick:**
- 008:017 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses.

Matthew

- 009:035 **And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness and every disease among the people.**

Matthew

- 014:035 **And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that country round about, and brought unto him all that were diseased;**
- 014:036 And besought him that they might only touch the hem of his garment: and as many as touched were made perfectly whole

Mark

- 001:032 **And at even, when the sun did set, they brought unto him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with devils.**
- 001:033 And all the city was gathered together at the door.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

001:034 And he healed many that were sick of divers diseases, and cast out many devils; and suffered not the devils to speak, because they knew him.

Luke

004:040 **Now when the sun was setting, all they that had any sick with divers diseases brought them unto him; and he laid his hands on every one of them, and healed them.**

004:041 And devils also came out of many, crying out, and saying, Thou art Christ the Son of God. And he rebuking them suffered them not to speak: for they knew that he was Christ.

John

021:025 **And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written.** Amen.

The point is, Jesus performed many miracles not detailed in the bible. People came to Him because they knew He could heal them. People never denied Jesus performed miracles. But Jesus's enemies questioned from where Jesus received power to perform miracles.

Now let's look at some other miraculous stories in the bible.

### Jesus Raises Some From The Dead

Although Jesus probably raised several from the dead, the bible gives details of Jesus raising 3 people from the dead. The longest story is of Lazarus. It is a rather long story so key verses have been highlighted. Notice the following as you read the story.

1. Jesus was informed Lazarus was sick, then died before Jesus arrived.
2. Lazarus was in the tomb for 4 days before Jesus raised him from the dead
3. The chief priests and Pharisees decided to kill Jesus
4. Many Jews came to see Lazarus
5. The chief priests wanted to kill Lazarus because many people believed in Jesus because of Lazarus being raised from the dead.
6. We are not told what Lazarus experienced when he was dead. We are not told what Lazarus said or how he lived after being raised from the dead. We are only told he followed Jesus.
7. This illustrates one reason why Jesus performed miracles – that others would be drawn in faith to Him.

John

011:001 **Now a certain man was sick, named Lazarus, of Bethany, the town of Mary and her sister Martha.**

011:002 (It was that Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick.)

011:003 Therefore his sisters sent unto him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick.

011:004 When Jesus heard that, he said, This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby.

011:005 Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus.

011:006 When he had heard therefore that he was sick, he abode two days still in the same place where he was.

011:007 Then after that saith he to his disciples, Let us go into Judaea again.

011:008 His disciples say unto him, Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee; and goest thou thither again?

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 011:009 Jesus answered, Are there not twelve hours in the day? If any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world.
- 011:010 But if a man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him.
- 011:011 These things said he: and after that he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth; but I go, that I may awake him out of sleep.
- 011:012 Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleep, he shall do well.
- 011:013 Howbeit Jesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of taking of rest in sleep.
- 011:014 **Then said Jesus unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead.**
- 011:015 **And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, to the intent ye may believe; nevertheless let us go unto him.**
- 011:016 Then said Thomas, which is called Didymus, unto his fellowdisciples, Let us also go, that we may die with him.
- 011:017 Then when Jesus came, he found that he had lain in the grave four days already.
- 011:018 Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off:
- 011:019 And many of the Jews came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.
- 011:020 Then Martha, as soon as she heard that Jesus was coming, went and met him: but Mary sat still in the house.
- 011:021 **Then said Martha unto Jesus, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.**
- 011:022 **But I know, that even now, whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give it thee.**
- 011:023 **Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise again.**
- 011:024 Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day.
- 011:025 Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live:
- 011:026 And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this?
- 011:027 She saith unto him, Yea, Lord: I believe that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world.
- 011:028 And when she had so said, she went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master is come, and calleth for thee.
- 011:029 As soon as she heard that, she arose quickly, and came unto him.
- 011:030 Now Jesus was not yet come into the town, but was in that place where Martha met him.
- 011:031 The Jews then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary, that she rose up hastily and went out, followed her, saying, She goeth unto the grave to weep there.
- 011:032 **Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.**
- 011:033 When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled.
- 011:034 And said, Where have ye laid him? They said unto him, Lord, come and see.
- 011:035 Jesus wept.
- 011:036 Then said the Jews, Behold how he loved him!
- 011:037 **And some of them said, Could not this man, which opened the eyes of the blind, have caused that even this man should not have died?**
- 011:038 **Jesus therefore again groaning in himself cometh to the grave. It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it.**
- 011:039 **Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been dead four days.**
- 011:040 Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that, if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God?

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 011:041 **Then they took away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me.**
- 011:042 **And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people which stand by I said it, that they may believe that thou hast sent me.**
- 011:043 **And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth.**
- 011:044 **And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with graveclothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go.**
- 011:045 **Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, believed on him.**
- 011:046 But some of them went their ways to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done.
- 011:047 **Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many miracles.**
- 011:048 **If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him: and the Romans shall come and take away both our place and nation.**
- 011:049 And one of them, named Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all,
- 011:050 Nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not.
- 011:051 And this spake he not of himself: but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation;
- 011:052 And not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one the children of God that were scattered abroad.
- 011:053 **Then from that day forth they took counsel together for to put him to death.**
- 011:054 **Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews; but went thence unto a country near to the wilderness, into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.**
- 011:055 And the Jews' passover was nigh at hand: and many went out of the country up to Jerusalem before the passover, to purify themselves.
- 011:056 Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple, What think ye, that he will not come to the feast?
- 011:057 Now both the chief priests and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that, if any man knew where he were, he should shew it, that they might take him

John

- 012:001 **Then Jesus six days before the passover came to Bethany, where Lazarus was, which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead.**
- 012:002 **There they made him a supper; and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him.**
- 012:003 Then took Mary a pound of ointment of spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.
- 012:004 Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, which should betray him,
- 012:005 Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?
- 012:006 This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein.
- 012:007 Then said Jesus, Let her alone: against the day of my burying hath she kept this.
- 012:008 For the poor always ye have with you; but me ye have not always.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

**012:009 Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there: and they came not for Jesus' sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead.**

**012:010 But the chief priests consulted that they might put Lazarus also to death;**

**012:011 Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.**

012:012 On the next day much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem,

012:013 Took branches of palm trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna: Blessed is the King of Israel that cometh in the name of the Lord.

012:014 And Jesus, when he had found a young ass, sat thereon; as it is written,

012:015 Fear not, daughter of Sion: behold, thy King cometh, sitting on an ass's colt.

012:016 These things understood not his disciples at the first: but when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things unto him.

**012:017 The people therefore that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record.**

**012:018 For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle.**

**012:019 The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? behold, the world is gone after him.**

**Miracles After Jesus – The Disciple Miracles**

The following passage is from when Jesus was on earth. Notice that He gave His disciples power to perform some miracles.

Luke

**010:001 After these things the LORD appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before his face into every city and place, whither he himself would come.**

010:002 Therefore said he unto them, The harvest truly is great, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth labourers into his harvest.

010:003 Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves.

010:004 Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes: and salute no man by the way.☐

010:005 And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace be to this house.

010:006 And if the son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again.

010:007 And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house.

010:008 And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you:

010:009 And heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.

010:010 But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say,

010:011 Even the very dust of your city, which cleaveth on us, we do wipe off against you: notwithstanding be ye sure of this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.

010:012 But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city.

010:013 Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes.

010:014 But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgment, than for you.

010:015 And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven, shalt be thrust down to hell.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 010:016 He that heareth you heareth me; and he that despiseth you despiseth me; and he that despiseth me despiseth him that sent me.☞
- 010:017 **And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy name.**
- 010:018 And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven.
- 010:019 **Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.**
- 010:020 **Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven.**

The following passage is after Jesus's resurrection.

## Mark

- 016:014 Afterward he appeared unto the eleven as they sat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen.
- 016:015 And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.
- 016:016 He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.
- 016:017 **And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues;**
- 016:018 **They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.**
- 016:019 So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God.
- 016:020 **And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen**

The point is, his disciples were given power to do some miracles. Details of some of these miracles are recorded in the book of Acts. Why? Notice the following passage

## Acts

- 004:013 Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled; and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.
- 004:014 **And beholding the man which was healed standing with them, they could say nothing against it.**
- 004:015 But when they had commanded them to go aside out of the council, they conferred among themselves,
- 004:016 Saying, What shall we do to these men? **for that indeed a notable miracle hath been done by them is manifest to all them that dwell in Jerusalem; and we cannot deny it.**

It was to help bring people to faith in Jesus.

Jesus's Resurrection

There are many passages about Jesus rising from the dead. The following are a few key passages, especially those which speak of witnesses of Jesus's resurrection.

## Mark

- 016:001 And when the sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him.
- 016:002 And very early in the morning the first day of the week, they came unto the sepulchre at the rising of the sun.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 016:003 And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre?
- 016:004 And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away: for it was very great.
- 016:005 And entering into the sepulchre, they saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment; and they were affrighted.
- 016:006 And he saith unto them, Be not affrighted: Ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, which was crucified: he is risen; he is not here: behold the place where they laid him.
- 016:007 But go your way, tell his disciples and Peter that he goeth before you into Galilee: there shall ye see him, as he said unto you.
- 016:008 And they went out quickly, and fled from the sepulchre; for they trembled and were amazed: neither said they any thing to any man; for they were afraid.
- 016:009 **Now when Jesus was risen early the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven devils.**
- 016:010 And she went and told them that had been with him, as they mourned and wept.
- 016:011 And they, when they had heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, believed not.
- 016:012 **After that he appeared in another form unto two of them, as they walked, and went into the country.**
- 016:013 And they went and told it unto the residue: neither believed they them.
- 016:014 **Afterward he appeared unto the eleven as they sat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen.**
- 016:015 And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.
- 016:016 He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.
- 016:017 And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues;
- 016:018 They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.
- 016:019 So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God.
- 016:020 And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen

## 1 Corinthians

- 015:003 For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures;
- 015:004 **And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures:**
- 015:005 **And that he was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve:**
- 015:006 **After that, he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once; of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep.**
- 015:007 **After that, he was seen of James; then of all the apostles.**
- 015:008 **And last of all he was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time.**

There are additional passages in Matthew, Luke, John and Acts regarding witnesses to Jesus's resurrection. But the above are presented as evidence and convenience to the reader of this miracle.

## Romans

- 006:009 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him.



## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

The following is a statement of Jesus.

## Revelation

001:018 I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.

**Biblical Warning Of False Teachers**

There are ministers/teachers/scholars who reject the miracles in the bible. They even try to explain away those which Jesus performed. From such, stay away.

## 1 Timothy

004:001 **Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils;**

004:002 **Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron;**

And again

## Jude

001:003 Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.

001:004 **For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.**

## 1 John

002:022 **Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist, that denieth the Father and the Son.**

002:023 **Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: he that acknowledgeth the Son hath the Father also.**

002:024 Let that therefore abide in you, which ye have heard from the beginning. If that which ye have heard from the beginning shall remain in you, ye also shall continue in the Son, and in the Father.

002:025 And this is the promise that he hath promised us, even eternal life.

## Who Is The Anti-Christ

### General Definition

There are some people who accuse others of being the anti-Christ. Often those accused are either politicians or religious leaders. Sometimes they are accused because of their politics or doctrines. But who or what is an 'anti-Christ'?

The term actually only appears in 1 & 2 John. Let's look at those passages.

1 John

002:018 **Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time.**

002:019 They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest that they were not all of us.

002:020 But ye have an unction from the Holy One, and ye know all things.

002:021 I have not written unto you because ye know not the truth, but because ye know it, and that no lie is of the truth.

002:022 **Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist, that denieth the Father and the Son.**

002:023 Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: he that acknowledgeth the Son hath the Father also.

1 John

004:001 Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

004:002 Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God:

004:003 **And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.**

2 John

001:007 **For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist.**

These epistles were written near the end of the first century AD after some cults started up claiming Jesus was not both true God and true man, ie, the Christ. John, in his epistles and Gospel, addressed some of the false doctrine of these cults and points out that they were not Christian, even though they claimed they were.

The term 'antichrist' strictly refers to those who deny Jesus is the Christ (God in human form). So, it includes those who say Jesus was just a man. It includes those who say Jesus was just a prophet. It includes those who say Jesus came as a spirit only. It includes those who say Jesus never existed. But in general, it was used for the leaders and teachers.

So, are politicians and religious leaders 'antichrists'? Depends on if they believe Jesus is the Christ.

### During the Great Tribulation Period

Daniel

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

009:026 And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined.

009:027 And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate

## Revelation

014:006 And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people,

014:007 Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to him; for the hour of his judgment is come: and worship him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.

014:008 And there followed another angel, saying, Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

014:009 And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand,

014:010 The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb:

014:011 And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.

## Ancient Israel Mission Work

Some people accuse God of being unfair in ancient times by only revealing Himself to the Hebrews. They claim God sent these ancient peoples to hell without having a plan for them to know Him. But is that true?

Remember, the bible is God's word, His teaching for us. It is not a comprehensive history book of the world. So it gives history as examples by which we can learn.

### Noah's Arc as Mission Work

One story about ancient mission work is hundreds of years before Abraham. It is the story of Noah.

Genesis

006:005 **And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.**

006:006 And it repented the LORD that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart.

006:007 And the LORD said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth; both man, and beast, and the creeping thing, and the fowls of the air; for it repenteth me that I have made them.

006:008 **But Noah found grace in the eyes of the LORD.**

006:009 **These are the generations of Noah: Noah was a just man and perfect in his generations, and Noah walked with God.**

006:010 **And Noah begat three sons, Shem, Ham, and Japheth.**

006:011 The earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with violence.

006:012 And God looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth.

006:013 **And God said unto Noah, The end of all flesh is come before me; for the earth is filled with violence through them; and, behold, I will destroy them with the earth.**

006:014 **Make thee an ark of gopher wood; rooms shalt thou make in the ark, and shalt pitch it within and without with pitch.**

006:015 And this is the fashion which thou shalt make it of: The length of the ark shall be three hundred cubits, the breadth of it fifty cubits, and the height of it thirty cubits.

006:016 A window shalt thou make to the ark, and in a cubit shalt thou finish it above; and the door of the ark shalt thou set in the side thereof; with lower, second, and third stories shalt thou make it.

006:017 **And, behold, I, even I, do bring a flood of waters upon the earth, to destroy all flesh, wherein is the breath of life, from under heaven; and every thing that is in the earth shall die.**

006:018 **But with thee will I establish my covenant; and thou shalt come into the ark, thou, and thy sons, and thy wife, and thy sons' wives with thee.**

So how long did it take to build the arc? Notice verse 10 says Noah had 3 sons. The following verse tells us how old Noah was when he had them

Genesis

005:032 And Noah was five hundred years old: and Noah begat Shem, Ham, and Japheth.

Notice how old Noah was when the flood came.

Genesis

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

007:006 And Noah was six hundred years old when the flood of waters was upon the earth.

So from the time Noah started building the arc until the flood came, it was probably about 100 years. It is unlikely Noah tried hiding his activities. It is very likely the story of “crazy” Noah and his arc was spread across much of the world, along with the reason why he was building the arc. Yet in those 100 years, there is no recording of anyone turning to God, and no one other than Noah’s family entering the arc.

So what is the point? Noah’s activities, ordered by God, was a kind of mission work. It spread God’s message.

**Israel’s 40 Years In The Wilderness**

God promised the land of Canaan, now called Palestine, to Abraham and his descendants. After 400 years in Egypt, God brought the Hebrews out so they could possess the land. But before they did, they sinned and God ordered them to remain in the wilderness for 40 years before taking the land. During those 40 years, the story of them spread throughout Canaan. After those 40 years, the Israelis sent a couple of spies into the city of Jericho before attacking it. A woman by the name of Rahab protected them, and told them

Joshua

002:008 And before they were laid down, she came up unto them upon the roof;

002:009 **And she said unto the men, I know that the LORD hath given you the land, and that your terror is fallen upon us, and that all the inhabitants of the land faint because of you.**

002:010 **For we have heard how the LORD dried up the water of the Red sea for you, when ye came out of Egypt; and what ye did unto the two kings of the Amorites, that were on the other side Jordan, Sihon and Og, whom ye utterly destroyed.**

002:011 **And as soon as we had heard these things, our hearts did melt, neither did there remain any more courage in any man, because of you: for the LORD your God, he is God in heaven above, and in earth beneath.**

002:012 Now therefore, I pray you, swear unto me by the LORD, since I have shewed you kindness, that ye will also shew kindness unto my father's house, and give me a true token:

002:013 And that ye will save alive my father, and my mother, and my brethren, and my sisters, and all that they have, and deliver our lives from death.

002:014 And the men answered her, Our life for yours, if ye utter not this our business. And it shall be, when the LORD hath given us the land, that we will deal kindly and truly with thee.

002:015 Then she let them down by a cord through the window: for her house was upon the town wall, and she dwelt upon the wall.

So even without sending missionaries, the stories of God’s miracles for the Hebrews spread, and that was a testimony to the other nations who was the true God. Interestingly, even knowing this, only Rahab, and perhaps some of her relatives, believed. And after Jericho, none of the Canaanites turned to God, preferring to fight and die as summarized in the following passage.

Joshua

011:012 And all the cities of those kings, and all the kings of them, did Joshua take, and smote them with the edge of the sword, and he utterly destroyed them, as Moses the servant of the LORD commanded.

011:013 But as for the cities that stood still in their strength, Israel burned none of them, save Hazor only; that did Joshua burn.

011:014 And all the spoil of these cities, and the cattle, the children of Israel took for a prey unto themselves; but every man they smote with the edge of the sword, until they had destroyed them, neither left they any to breathe.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 011:015 As the LORD commanded Moses his servant, so did Moses command Joshua, and so did Joshua; he left nothing undone of all that the LORD commanded Moses.
- 011:016 So Joshua took all that land, the hills, and all the south country, and all the land of Goshen, and the valley, and the plain, and the mountain of Israel, and the valley of the same;
- 011:017 Even from the mount Halak, that goeth up to Seir, even unto Baalgad in the valley of Lebanon under mount Hermon: and all their kings he took, and smote them, and slew them.
- 011:018 Joshua made war a long time with all those kings.
- 011:019 **There was not a city that made peace with the children of Israel, save the Hivites the inhabitants of Gibeon: all other they took in battle.**
- 011:020 **For it was of the LORD to harden their hearts, that they should come against Israel in battle, that he might destroy them utterly, and that they might have no favour, but that he might destroy them, as the LORD commanded Moses.**

What does it mean that God hardened their hearts? It means God forced them to make a choice. The time for dithering had ended.

Israel, A Beacon and Nation of Priests

God's original plan was for the nation of Israel to be a kind of beacon of truth drawing people to God. God demonstrated a physical presence in the Israeli tabernacle and, later, in the temple. The first passage below is during their journey in the Wilderness. The second passage is after they were settled in Canaan, in the temple.

## Exodus

- 040:034 Then a cloud covered the tent of the congregation, and the glory of the LORD filled the tabernacle.
- 040:035 And Moses was not able to enter into the tent of the congregation, because the cloud abode thereon, and the glory of the LORD filled the tabernacle.
- 040:036 And when the cloud was taken up from over the tabernacle, the children of Israel went onward in all their journeys:
- 040:037 But if the cloud were not taken up, then they journeyed not till the day that it was taken up.
- 040:038 For the cloud of the LORD was upon the tabernacle by day, and fire was on it by night, in the sight of all the house of Israel, throughout all their journeys

## Ezekiel

- 010:004 Then the glory of the LORD went up from the cherub, and stood over the threshold of the house; and the house was filled with the cloud, and the court was full of the brightness of the LORD's glory.

The following passages state that the nation of Israel was to be a nation of priests

## Exodus

- 019:003 And Moses went up unto God, and the LORD called unto him out of the mountain, saying, Thus shalt thou say to the house of Jacob, and tell the children of Israel;
- 019:004 Ye have seen what I did unto the Egyptians, and how I bare you on eagles' wings, and brought you unto myself.
- 019:005 **Now therefore, if ye will obey my voice indeed, and keep my covenant, then ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto me above all people: for all the earth is mine:**
- 019:006 **And ye shall be unto me a kingdom of priests, and an holy nation. These are the words which thou shalt speak unto the children of Israel.**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

And that the peoples of the world would be drawn to them.

## 1 Kings

008:041 **Moreover concerning a stranger, that is not of thy people Israel, but cometh out of a far country for thy name's sake;**

008:042 **(For they shall hear of thy great name, and of thy strong hand, and of thy stretched out arm;) when he shall come and pray toward this house;**

008:043 **Hear thou in heaven thy dwelling place, and do according to all that the stranger calleth to thee for: that all people of the earth may know thy name, to fear thee, as do thy people Israel; and that they may know that this house, which I have builded, is called by thy name.**

## 2 Chronicles

006:032 **Moreover concerning the stranger, which is not of thy people Israel, but is come from a far country for thy great name's sake, and thy mighty hand, and thy stretched out arm; if they come and pray in this house;**

006:033 **Then hear thou from the heavens, even from thy dwelling place, and do according to all that the stranger calleth to thee for; that all people of the earth may know thy name, and fear thee, as doth thy people Israel, and may know that this house which I have built is called by thy name.**

How many came? The bible does not say. However, there are instructions in the bible for how 'strangers' (that is, foreigners) were to participate in the Hebrew religious festivals. But the bible does relate one story of the Queen of Sheba coming to Israel.

## 1 Kings

010:001 **And when the queen of Sheba heard of the fame of Solomon concerning the name of the LORD, she came to prove him with hard questions.**

010:002 **And she came to Jerusalem with a very great train, with camels that bare spices, and very much gold, and precious stones: and when she was come to Solomon, she communed with him of all that was in her heart.**

010:003 **And Solomon told her all her questions: there was not any thing hid from the king, which he told her not.**

010:004 And when the queen of Sheba had seen all Solomon's wisdom, and the house that he had built,

010:005 And the meat of his table, and the sitting of his servants, and the attendance of his ministers, and their apparel, and his cupbearers, and his ascent by which he went up unto the house of the LORD; there was no more spirit in her.

010:006 And she said to the king, It was a true report that I heard in mine own land of thy acts and of thy wisdom.

010:007 Howbeit I believed not the words, until I came, and mine eyes had seen it: and, behold, the half was not told me: thy wisdom and prosperity exceedeth the fame which I heard.

010:008 Happy are thy men, happy are these thy servants, which stand continually before thee, and that hear thy wisdom.

010:009 **Blessed be the LORD thy God, which delighted in thee, to set thee on the throne of Israel: because the LORD loved Israel for ever, therefore made he thee king, to do judgment and justice.**

010:010 And she gave the king an hundred and twenty talents of gold, and of spices very great store, and precious stones: there came no more such abundance of spices as these which the queen of Sheba gave to king Solomon.

010:011 And the navy also of Hiram, that brought gold from Ophir, brought in from Ophir great plenty of almug trees, and precious stones.

010:012 And the king made of the almug trees pillars for the house of the LORD, and for the king's house, harps also and psalteries for singers: there came no such almug trees, nor were seen unto this day.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

010:013 **And king Solomon gave unto the queen of Sheba all her desire, whatsoever she asked, beside that which Solomon gave her of his royal bounty. So she turned and went to her own country, she and her servants.**

Israeli Missions

Although the Israelis were to be a beacon to the world, there is one biblical account of how God sent an Israeli prophet to Nineveh, the Assyrian capital, to convert them. The entire story is in the book of Jonah. A few selected passages below highlight the story.

Jonah

001:001 Now the word of the LORD came unto Jonah the son of Amittai, saying,

001:002 Arise, go to Nineveh, that great city, and cry against it; for their wickedness is come up before me.

Jonah

003:001 **And the word of the LORD came unto Jonah the second time, saying,**

003:002 **Arise, go unto Nineveh, that great city, and preach unto it the preaching that I bid thee.**

003:003 **So Jonah arose, and went unto Nineveh, according to the word of the LORD. Now Nineveh was an exceeding great city of three days' journey.**

003:004 **And Jonah began to enter into the city a day's journey, and he cried, and said, Yet forty days, and Nineveh shall be overthrown.**

003:005 **So the people of Nineveh believed God, and proclaimed a fast, and put on sackcloth, from the greatest of them even to the least of them.**

003:006 For word came unto the king of Nineveh, and he arose from his throne, and he laid his robe from him, and covered him with sackcloth, and sat in ashes.

003:007 And he caused it to be proclaimed and published through Nineveh by the decree of the king and his nobles, saying, Let neither man nor beast, herd nor flock, taste any thing: let them not feed, nor drink water:

003:008 But let man and beast be covered with sackcloth, and cry mightily unto God: yea, let them turn every one from his evil way, and from the violence that is in their hands.

003:009 Who can tell if God will turn and repent, and turn away from his fierce anger, that we perish not?

003:010 **And God saw their works, that they turned from their evil way; and God repented of the evil, that he had said that he would do unto them; and he did it not.**

Were there other Hebrew missionaries that God sent out? We do not know. But some other Hebrews did spread God's word to other countries, although not actual missionaries. One example are the Israelis that went into Babylonian captivity. The Hebrew prophet, Daniel, worked in the court of its king Nebuchadnezzar, and it appears the king came to a saving faith in God.

The Wise Men From The East

Notice the following passage about the wise men who came to Bethlehem after Jesus's birth.

Matthew

002:001 **Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem,**

002:002 **Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.**

002:003 When Herod the king had heard these things, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him.



## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

002:004 And when he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born.

002:005 And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judaea: for thus it is written by the prophet,

002:006 And thou Bethlehem, in the land of Juda, art not the least among the princes of Juda: for out of thee shall come a Governor, that shall rule my people Israel.

The bible does not say from which countries they came, only that they came from the east. So they must have had some knowledge of the prophecies of a Messiah in Israel. The bible does not say how they got this knowledge, only that they had some knowledge. This is more evidence that at least some scripture was known outside of Israel. Perhaps it came during the Jewish captivity in Babylon. But that is just speculation.

**Philip and the Chariot**

The following story from Acts tells us how Philip met a man from Ethiopia who was reading the book of Isaiah and had trouble understanding it. This illustrates that at least some people in Ethiopia knew of some of the teachings in the scriptures. We are not told how he got the knowledge. Only that he had some and was trying to learn more.

Acts

008:026 And the angel of the Lord spake unto Philip, saying, Arise, and go toward the south unto the way that goeth down from Jerusalem unto Gaza, which is desert.

008:027 **And he arose and went: and, behold, a man of Ethiopia, an eunuch of great authority under Candace queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treasure, and had come to Jerusalem for to worship,**

008:028 **Was returning, and sitting in his chariot read Esaias the prophet.**

008:029 Then the Spirit said unto Philip, Go near, and join thyself to this chariot.

008:030 And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him read the prophet Esaias, and said, Understandest thou what thou readest?

008:031 And he said, How can I, except some man should guide me? And he desired Philip that he would come up and sit with him.

008:032 The place of the scripture which he read was this, He was led as a sheep to the slaughter; and like a lamb dumb before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth:

008:033 In his humiliation his judgment was taken away: and who shall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth.

008:034 And the eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray thee, of whom speaketh the prophet this? of himself, or of some other man?

008:035 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same scripture, and preached unto him Jesus.

008:036 And as they went on their way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch said, See, here is water; what doth hinder me to be baptized?

008:037 And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.

008:038 And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him.

008:039 And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the eunuch saw him no more: and he went on his way rejoicing.

008:040 But Philip was found at Azotus: and passing through he preached in all the cities, till he came to Caesarea

**Those Who Do Not Hear The Gospel**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

Some question the fairness of the fate of those who never hear the Gospel. But notice the following insight from Jesus.

John

006:035 And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst.

006:036 But I said unto you, That ye also have seen me, and believe not.

006:037 **All that the Father giveth me shall come to me;** and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out.

006:038 For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.

006:039 **And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.**

006:040 And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.

This raises the issue of predestination. Please see the chapter about it in this book.

But note that those who never had a chance to know the Gospel will have light punishment in the afterlife.

Luke

012:041 Then Peter said unto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all?

012:042 And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season?

012:043 Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing.

012:044 Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath.

012:045 But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the menservants and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken;

012:046 The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers.

012:047 And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.

012:048 **But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required:** and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

## The LGBTQ Debate

There has been a lot of debate whether LGBTQ (gay) lifestyle is sinful and if LGBTQ people can be true Christians. And people have claimed Jesus never spoke on this topic.

First, let's look at an Old Testament passage on the topic.

Leviticus

018:022 **Thou shalt not lie with mankind, as with womankind: it is abomination.**

Leviticus

020:013 **If a man also lie with mankind, as he lieth with a woman, both of them have committed an abomination: they shall surely be put to death; their blood shall be upon them.**

Deuteronomy

022:005 **The woman shall not wear that which pertaineth unto a man, neither shall a man put on a woman's garment: for all that do so are abomination unto the LORD thy God**

So are these things still sinful today? What did Jesus teach? In Matthew 5 verse 17 Jesus said he was not here to destroy the law.

Matthew

005:017 **Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil.**

So they remain sinful. And Jesus confirmed this in Matthew 15 verses 19 and 20, when he said sex outside of marriage (adultery and fornication) is sin.

Matthew

015:019 **For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies:**

015:020 **These are the things which defile a man: but to eat with unwashen hands defileth not a man.**

So then to whom can someone marry? In Matthew 19 verses 4-6 Jesus said marriage was between a man and a woman.

Matthew

019:004 **And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female,**

019:005 **And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh?**

019:006 **Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.**

### Give None Offense That They Can Be Brought To Repentance

1 Corinthians

010:032 **Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the church of God:**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

010:033 **Even as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine own profit, but the profit of many, that they may be saved.**

2 Thessalonians

003:014 **And if any man obey not our word by this epistle, note that man, and have no company with him, that he may be ashamed.**

003:015 **Yet count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother.**

We are reminded not to follow others into their sinful life styles.

Romans

012:001 I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.

012:002 **And be not conformed to this world:** but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.

The point is, you cannot win someone for Christ by constantly condemning them, constantly criticizing them.

Some say Jesus was very tolerant of sinners. But notice the reason was to bring them to repentance. You see, so long as someone has something they love more than God, they will not come to God.

Mark

002:015 And it came to pass, that, as Jesus sat at meat in his house, many publicans and sinners sat also together with Jesus and his disciples: for there were many, and they followed him.

002:016 And when the scribes and Pharisees saw him eat with publicans and sinners, they said unto his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with publicans and sinners?

002:017 **When Jesus heard it, he saith unto them, They that are whole have no need of the physician, but they that are sick: I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.**

John

003:017 For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.

003:018 He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

003:019 **And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.**

003:020 **For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved.**

### **Born This Way**

Some people defend homosexuality by saying, 'I was born this way'. But the fact is, people are born sinful, self-centered, and selfish. Parents teach children to be good – see what a child will do who is not disciplined by its parents. But notice what Jesus said about our natural heart – the heart we are born with.

Matthew

015:019 For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies:

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

## Mark

007:020 And he said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man.

007:021 For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,

007:022 Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness:

007:023 All these evil things come from within, and defile the man.

This is the heart or nature that people are born with. (See the section below on what Jesus said about homosexuality which can be likened to fornication.) So just to say, "I was born this way" justifies nothing. Notice the following passages which confirm we are born with this nature.

## Psalm

051:005 Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me.

Newer translations are more clear, stating we are sinful from the time we are conceived. There are more passages on this. The ones presented are just a sampling.

## People Are Spirits in Bodies

### What is a Human?

So, what is a human? Atheists see people as having a body and that is all. But that is not what the bible teaches. The bible tells us that we are spirits living in physical bodies. The earliest statement about this is in Genesis.

Genesis

002:007 And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, **and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.**

The above passage is a bit poetic. And people often use the words 'soul' and 'spirit' interchangeably. But there is a slight difference in their meaning. The following passages highlight the fact that people are spirits with a soul living in a body.

Hebrews

004:012 For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of **soul and spirit**, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

1 Thessalonians

005:023 And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and **I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body** be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

### Separation of Body and Spirit at Death

When we die, our physical bodies remain on earth while our spirits 'return to God'. The following passages speak on this.

Ecclesiastes

012:007 **Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was: and the spirit shall return unto God who gave it.**

James

002:026 **For as the body without the spirit is dead**, so faith without works is dead also

The following is part of a passage when Jesus raise a girl who was dead. Once again, it shows a person's spirit was absent from the body.

Luke

008:054 And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying, Maid, arise.

008:055 **And her spirit came again, and she arose straightway**: and he commanded to give her meat

In the following passage, the Apostle Paul says these bodies are just places where we live. Our bodies are not who we are.

2 Corinthians

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

005:006 Therefore we are always confident, knowing that, whilst we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord:

005:007 (For we walk by faith, not by sight:)

005:008 **We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord.**

The following passage is from Jesus's crucifixion and death on the cross.

Luke

023:039 **And one of the malefactors which were hanged** railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us.

023:040 But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

023:041 And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss.

023:042 And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom.

023:043 **And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, Today shalt thou be with me in paradise.**

The following parable of Jesus tells us that when a person dies, their spirit either goes to paradise or to a place of torment.

Luke

16:019 There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day:

016:020 And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores,

016:021 And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores.

016:022 **And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried;**

016:023 **And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.**

016:024 And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame.

016:025 But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

016:026 And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence.

016:027 Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house:

016:028 For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

016:029 Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them.

016:030 And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent.

016:031 And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead

The point of all these passages is to point out that when a person dies, their spirit leaves their body and either goes to paradise or a place of torment.

### Other References to Our Spirit

John

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

004:024 **God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.**

## Romans

008:014 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.

008:015 For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

008:016 **The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God:**

## Galatians

006:018 Brethren, **the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit.** Amen

## 2 Timothy

004:022 **The Lord Jesus Christ be with thy spirit.** Grace be with you. Amen

## Philemon

001:025 **The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit.** Amen

## Hebrews

012:022 But ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels,

012:023 To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, **and to the spirits of just men made perfect,**

012:024 And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel.

## James

004:005 Do ye think that the scripture saith in vain, The **spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth to envy?**

## Acts

007:059 **And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.**

007:060 And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep.

## Acts

017:016 Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, **his spirit was stirred in him,** when he saw the city wholly given to idolatry.

## Acts

018:005 And when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, **Paul was pressed in the spirit, and testified to the Jews that Jesus was Christ.**

## Romans

001:009 For God is my witness, **whom I serve with my spirit** in the gospel of his Son, that without ceasing I make mention of you always in my prayers;

001:010 Making request, if by any means now at length I might have a prosperous journey by the will of God to come unto you.



## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

## Romans

002:028 For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh:

002:029 **But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.**

## 1 Corinthians

005:001 It is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife.

005:002 And ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed might be taken away from among you.

005:003 For I verily, as absent in body, but present in spirit, have judged already, as though I were present, concerning him that hath so done this deed,

005:004 In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ,

005:005 **To deliver such an one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.**

## 1 Corinthians

006:020 **For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.**

## Born Again

What does it mean to be a 'born-again' Christian? It means that one is 'in' Christ. It means their spirit comes into a special union or communion with Jesus. This writing will go into that more shortly. But let's first start with an analogy that Jesus gave to describe this.

The following parable of Jesus probably best illustrates what it is to be a born again Christian.

John

015:001 **I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.**

015:002 **Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.**

015:003 **Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you.**

015:004 **Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me.**

015:005 **I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.**

015:006 **If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.**

The point is, a Christian must be in Christ like a branch is in the vine. Branches which are not in the vine may look healthy. But they are effectively dead because they will wither and die by themselves. When we born into this world, we are like branches which are not in the vine. We become grafted in thru faith in Jesus.

Notice there are 2 different types of branches which are taken away. One type is described in verse 2. These are branches which are in Christ, real Christians. But they do not produce any fruit. Christians which produce no fruit, no good works, may be taken away 'prematurely' to heaven. We sometimes see this in prodigal sons. The other type of branches which are taken away are those described in verse 6. These are people who never were in Jesus, who never were true Christians. They wither, die, and go to a place of torment.

The bible also teaches a true Christian is 'one' with Jesus, just as Jesus is one with (or 'in') the Father. Some verses stating this are:

John

010:038 But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know, and believe, **that the Father is in me, and I in him.**

John

014:009 Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father?

014:010 Believest thou not that **I am in the Father, and the Father in me?** the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works.

014:011 **Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me:** or else believe me for the very works' sake.

John

014:020 At that day ye shall know that **I am in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you.**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

Perhaps the greatest expression of what it means to be a born-again Christian can be found in part of a prayer Jesus prayed shortly before His trial and crucifixion.

John

017:020 Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word;

017:021 **That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us:** that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.

017:022 And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that<sup>2</sup> they may be one, even as we are one:

017:023 **I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one;** and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.

2 Corinthians

005:017 **Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.**

What is it to be 'one' with Him? That is hard to describe. But it is a special type of union or communion between Jesus and a Christian.

How does one come to faith?

Deuteronomy

004:029 **But if from thence thou shalt seek the LORD thy God, thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with all thy heart and with all thy soul.**

Jeremiah

029:013 **And ye shall seek me, and find me, when ye shall search for me with all your heart.**

Luke

011:009 And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you.

011:010 For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.

Matthew

022:036 **Master, which is the great commandment in the law?**

022:037 **Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.**

022:038 **This is the first and great commandment.**

022:039 And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

022:040 On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

Revelation

003:019 As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent.

003:020 **Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.**

**Christianity is a Relationship With God**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

**Religion is more than trivial rituals practiced at a church, temple, mosque, etc. Religion is a relationship with God.**

As mentioned before, when a person becomes a true born again Christian, they have a special union or communion with God as described in the following Bible passages. (There are more passages. This is just a sample.)

John

003:005 **Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.**

Another of Jesus's statement is

John

014:015 If ye love me, keep my commandments.

014:016 And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever;

014:017 **Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.**

Another of Jesus's statements is

John

016:013 **Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth:** for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come.

John

010:025 Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me.

010:026 But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.

010:027 **My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:**

1 Corinthians

003:016 **Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?**

003:017 If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are.

1 Corinthians

006:019 **What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own?**

2 Timothy

001:013 Hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus.

001:014 That good thing which was committed unto thee keep by the Holy Ghost which dwelleth in us.

1 John

004:013 **Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit.**

Romans

008:014 **For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.**

Romans

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

008:009 **But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.**

1 Thessalonians

005:019 **Quench not the Spirit.**

Ephesians

004:030 **And grieve not the holy Spirit of God**, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.

The Spirit is grieved when a born-again person willfully and knowingly disobeys. This can lead to a loss of closeness with God, and loss of the blessings the Spirit gives to believers.

### **Non-Christians Will Not Understand**

Non-Christians will not fully understand Christians.

1 John

003:001 Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: **therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not.**

### **Growing Up In Faith**

The Bible teaches in 1 Corinthians (especially chapter 8) that some Christians are stronger, more mature than others. Christians must grow up in their faith just like people grow up from infants to adults, and adults to seniors. The way Christians do this is by studying God's word and thru obedience. It also teaches that mature Christians not do anything to offend the faith of weaker Christians.

The following are some of the passages which talk about growing up.

1 Peter

002:001 Wherefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, all evil speakings,

002:002 As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby:

002:003 If so be ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious.

1 Corinthians

003:001 And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, even as unto babes in Christ.

003:002 I have fed you with milk, and not with meat: for hitherto ye were not able to bear it, neither yet now are ye able.

003:003 For ye are yet carnal: for whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk as men?

Hebrews

005:012 For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat.

005:013 For every one that useth milk is unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe.

005:014 But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

A little deeper explanation of carnality may be helpful. To be 'carnal' means to live after your human desires, irrespective of what God asks. It means living as one pleases. And this seems to describe most Christians. It grieves the Holy Spirit and these people are not sensitive to His leading. In most ways, it is hard knowing if carnal Christians are really born again. They act and speak like non-Christians. Some carnal Christians are that way because they have little knowledge of the Bible. Some are that way because they were mature Christians, but gave into their early desires like the story of the prodigal son in the Bible. To grow up, it is important to read/study the Bible, and to try to do what God desires. As Jesus said,

John

014:015 If ye love me, keep my commandments.

### Love for God

The Bible also teaches 2 important things about having a right relationship with God. One is that God deeply loves each of us. Second, God compares His love for us with that between spouses.

Two key verses are

John

003:016 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

Proverbs

009:010 The fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom: and the knowledge of the holy is understanding.

So how are these 2 verses related? Yes, we should have total reverence to God. But having fear of God is more than that. You see, a better translation of John 3:16 might be, "for God was so in love with each person in the world". God is in love with each of us. And He wishes we shared that love for Him. Have you ever been so in love with someone you were scared to hurt their feelings? That is one of the kinds of fear God wishes we have for Him.

The book, Song of Solomon in the Bible, is an analogy of God's love for us.

Jesus even compared His relationship to the church (the collection of all true believers) as the relationship between a groom and his bride. And even the Old Testament (the Torah) compares sin with the infidelity of a wife, or a prostitute.

### Dual Nature of Believers

Another important thing to realize is the dual nature of people. They have a spirit which lives in a physical body. This is true for all people. When someone accepts Christ as their savior, their spirit is born again, but not the body. This leads to a conflict as the apostle Paul writes in the Bible

Romans

007:014 For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin.

007:015 **For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I.**

007:016 If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is good.

007:017 Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.

007:018 For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

007:019 For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do.

007:020 Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.

007:021 I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me.

007:022 For I delight in the law of God after the inward man:

007:023 But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members.

007:024 **O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death?**

007:025 I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.

The Apostle John also wrote about it. Notice what on the surface seems to be contradicting statements.

1 John

001:008 **If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.**

001:009 If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

001:010 **If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.**

1 John

003:006 **Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not: whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither known him.**

1 John

003:009 **Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.**

The point is, when a person is born again, their spirit is brought into a special union or communion with Jesus. But we still have our sinful bodies. Our spirits being born again no longer desire selfish things but want to please God. Our spirits no longer sin. But our bodies still lust after things in this world. Our bodies have not been changed. We should bring our bodies into the submission of our spirits which desire the things of God.

Actually, the spirit side of a mature Christian is similar to what is described in the Old Testament (Torah).

Jeremiah

031:033 But this shall be the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; After those days, saith the LORD, **I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be my people.**

In the following passage, Jesus uses the term sheep to refer to people.

John

010:025 Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me.

010:026 But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.

010:027 **My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:**

### Not Born-Again Believers

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

Another important point to understanding Christians is that most people who think and claim they are Christians really are not. Many join churches just to be part of a community of nice people. Some join because they think all there is to being a Christian is to be a nice person. And many churches have fallen into liberalism, adopting/creating doctrine not based on the Bible, but based on what people want to hear. So many so called Christians believe what they want to believe rather than accept what the Bible teaches.

## 2 Timothy

004:003 For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears;

004:004 And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.

And another warning about Christian churches falling into apostasy.

## Jude

001:003 Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.

001:004 **For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.**

Please note that there is a difference between head and heart faith. Some people only give mental assent to Jesus, like believing Abraham Lincoln lived a long time ago. But notice the following verse

## Romans

010:009 That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.

010:010 **For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.**

## 2 Corinthians

005:017 **Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.**

## Matthew

007:021 **Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.**

007:022 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works?

007:023 And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

## John

003:001 There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews:

003:002 The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him.

003:003 **Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.**



## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 003:004 Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born?
- 003:005 **Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.**
- 003:006 That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.
- 003:007 Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again.
- 003:008 The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.
- 003:009 Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be?
- 003:010 Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things?
- 003:011 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen; and ye receive not our witness.
- 003:012 If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe, if I tell you of heavenly things?
- 003:013 And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven.
- 003:014 **And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up:**
- 003:015 **That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life.**
- 003:016 **For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.**
- 003:017 For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.
- 003:018 **He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.**
- 003:019 **And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.**
- 003:020 **For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved.**
- 003:021 **But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.**

Salvation

Ephesians

- 002:008 **For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God:**
- 002:009 **Not of works, lest any man should boast.**

When we turn our hearts/desires to Christ, we also turn from sin. When we ask Christ into our lives, spirits, we are born again. The following is part of a prayer that Jesus spoke.

John

- 017:021 **That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.**

John

- 014:016 And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever;
- 014:017 Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; **for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

014:018 I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you.

014:019 Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also.

014:020 **At that day ye shall know that I am in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you.**

The following is another quote of Jesus

Revelation

003:020 **Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.**

Notice the following passage.

John

010:025 Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me.

010:026 But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.

010:027 **My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:**

God can and does make Himself real to many Christians, making Himself more real to them that the air they breath or the earth they walk on. And He confirms in their hearts that the Bible is real and trustworthy. Not all Christians have that experience. But many do. As the bible says

Romans

008:014 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.

008:015 For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

008:016 **The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God:**

So what does it mean to be 'in' Christ? Notice the above verse uses the term 'our spirit'. People are more than a physical body. We each have a spirit which lives in a body. It is our spirit that can be 'in' Christ, that is, have a special union or communion with Him. Teaching about the physical and spiritual parts of people is beyond the scope of this study and could become very voluminous. But one interesting verse is below.

1 Thessalonians

005:023 And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

## Importance of Repentance

Jesus gives each of us an invitation to turn to Him and be born again. But part of this invitation includes repentance. You see, turning to God involves turning from sin.

Why is repentance necessary? Because we cannot serve or love 2 masters. Either we follow Jesus or we follow our own lusts as Jesus said below.

Matthew

006:024 **No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other.** Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

Luke

016:013 **No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other.** Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

The verses speak of mammon which is money. But this applies to any other earthly lust as well. If one loves something more than God, how can they come to Him? Remember, there are lots of things that become our masters if we give into our lusts. Some of them include food (gluttony), alcohol, sex, and the like. That is why I lie repeating the following verse.

Deuteronomy

004:029 **But if from thence thou shalt seek the LORD thy God, thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with all thy heart and with all thy soul.**

and

Romans

010:009 That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, **and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.**

010:010 For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

And the following offer from Jesus.

Revelation

003:019 **As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent.**

003:020 **Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.**

The following are additional bible passages illustrating why repentance is so important. There are many other verses that could be quoted. This is just a selection.

John

003:016 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

003:017 For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

003:018 He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

003:019 **And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.**

003:020 For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved.

003:021 But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

Luke

005:030 But their scribes and Pharisees murmured against his disciples, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with publicans and sinners?

005:031 And Jesus answering said unto them, They that are whole need not a physician; but they that are sick.

005:032 **I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.**

So Jesus is calling people to repent.

Luke

013:001 There were present at that season some that told him of the Galilaeans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.

013:002 And Jesus answering said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galilaeans were sinners above all the Galilaeans, because they suffered such things?

013:003 **I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.**

013:004 Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem?

013:005 **I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.**

Luke

024:046 And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day:

024:047 **And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.**

Then notice...

James

002:019 Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: **the devils also believe, and tremble.**

002:020 But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?

The point is, if a person truly believes and is born again, it will be reflected in their life. If someone is a true born-again Christian, they will want to do what God desires. It will show in their lives. Yes, people can drift away from God. But they will want to return.

There has been some confusion with the following passage.

Galatians

005:016 This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

005:017 For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.

005:018 But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law.

005:019 **Now the works of the flesh are** manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness,

005:020 Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies,

005:021 Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that **they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.**

Notice verse 21 which says ‘they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God’. But all people sin and these are among those sins. What this passage is saying is that people who do not repent, who will not turn to God will not inherit the kingdom of God. Turning to God means turning from sin. Giving one’s heart to God means a willingness to give up anything that can stand between us and God, ie, sin. In short, it means repentance.

When one turns to God, they turn from bad works. So no, repentance is not works.

A similar passage is in

1 Corinthians

006:009 Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind,

006:010 Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

We all are sinners. So, is this saying we cannot inherit the kingdom of God? No. So long as an unbeliever does not want to turn from sin, they will not come to God, they will not turn their heart to God. This is why it is so tragic to tell someone living in sin that all they have to do is mentally accept the facts of the bible. They may do this, but it does not mean they are born-again. Remember,

Roman

010:010 **For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness;** and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

And

Deuteronomy

004:029 But if from thence thou shalt seek the LORD thy God, thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with all thy heart and with all thy soul.

A person is not doing that if they are unrepentant. Faith is from the heart/spirit, not the head.

Luke

005:031 And Jesus answering said unto them, They that are whole need not a physician; but they that are sick.

005:032 **I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.**

## Faith and the Spirit

This section is written for Christians to help explain faith and baptism. It is not written so that non-Christians would understand.

### Baptism of the Holy Spirit

Notice the following 2 passages. The first is when Jesus was speaking.

John

003:015 **That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life.**

003:016 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that **whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.**

003:017 For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.

003:018 **He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already,** because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

003:019 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.

003:020 For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved.

003:021 But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

So according to Jesus's own words, faith/belief is all that is needed to be saved. But now notice the following passage, which also is Jesus's words.

Mark

016:016 **He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved;** but he that believeth not shall be damned.

So, the passage in Marks says that one must believe and be baptized. So which passage is correct?

First, it is important to remember that we are spirits living in bodies. This was discussed in the chapter entitled "People Are Spirits in Bodies". Second, when the bible speaks of the "heart", it is referring to a person's spirit/soul. Now notice the following passage.

Romans

010:009 **That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.**

010:010 **For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.**

Here, the Apostle Paul tells us that we must believe with our heart, not just with our heads. We need the indwelling and sealing of the Holy Spirit as mentioned in the following passage.

Romans

008:008 So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God.

008:009 But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. **Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

008:010 And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness.

008:011 **But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.**

008:012 Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh.

008:013 For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.

008:014 **For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.**

And so what is true baptism? Notice the following passages. *It is the baptism, the indwelling of the Holy Spirit.* The special union or communion formed between our spirit and the Holy Spirit.

## Matthew

003:011 **I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire:**

003:012 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.

## Luke

003:016 **John answered, saying unto them all, I indeed baptize you with water; but one mightier than I cometh, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire:**

003:017 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and will gather the wheat into his garner; but the chaff he will burn with fire unquenchable.

## 1 Corinthians

012:012 For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: so also is Christ.

012:013 **For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit.**

012:014 For the body is not one member, but many.

012:015 If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body?

012:016 And if the ear shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body?

012:017 If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling?

012:018 But now hath God set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him.

012:019 And if they were all one member, where were the body?

012:020 But now are they many members, yet but one body.

012:021 And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again the head to the feet, I have no need of you.

012:022 Nay, much more those members of the body, which seem to be more feeble, are necessary:

012:023 And those members of the body, which we think to be less honourable, upon these we bestow more abundant honour; and our uncomely parts have more abundant comeliness.

012:024 For our comely parts have no need: but God hath tempered the body together, having given more abundant honour to that part which lacked.

012:025 That there should be no schism in the body; but that the members should have the same care one for another.

012:026 And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it; or one member be honoured, all the members rejoice with it.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

012:027 Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular.

012:028 And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues.

012:029 Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers? are all workers of miracles?

012:030 Have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? do all interpret?

012:031 But covet earnestly the best gifts: and yet shew I unto you a more excellent way

## 1 Corinthians

003:016 **Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?**

003:017 If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are.

003:018 Let no man deceive himself. If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise.

003:019 For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written, He taketh the wise in their own craftiness.

003:020 And again, The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain.

003:021 Therefore let no man glory in men. For all things are your's;

003:022 Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; all are your's;

003:023 And ye are Christ's; and Christ is God's

**We Need to Examine Ourselves to See If We Are Christians**

## 2 Corinthians

013:005 **Examine yourselves, whether ye be in the faith; prove your own selves. Know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?**

013:006 But I trust that ye shall know that we are not reprobates.

013:007 Now I pray to God that ye do no evil; not that we should appear approved, but that ye should do that which is honest, though we be as reprobates.

In verse 5 passage, the word translated as 'reprobates' is actually the Greek word ἀδόκιμοί (adokimoi) which means "Failing to pass the test, unapproved, counterfeit. By implication, worthless." according to Strong per BibleHub.com. That is why newer translations sometimes use the phrase 'fail to pass the test' instead of 'reprobates'.

So how do we know if we have the indwelling of the Holy Spirit? The following passage describes one way.

## Romans

008:015 For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

008:016 **The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God:**

## John

10:026 But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.

010:027 **My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:**

010:028 And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.



## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

John

014:023 Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him.

014:024 He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me.

014:025 These things have I spoken unto you, being yet present with you.

014:026 **But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.**

John

**015:026 But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me**

So, God has and does make Himself real to people. Do you have a longing to learn more of the bible? That is another sign of a Christian.

Another sign of a true Christian is whether their lives are lived according to God's will.

James

002:017 **Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone.**

002:018 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works.

002:019 Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble.

002:020 But wilt thou know, O vain man, that **faith without works is dead?**

Do you desire to do God's will? A desire to learn more of the bible? Do you feel sorry for your sins and want to repent of them? Do you have a desire to live according to God's will? Being a member of a church, any church, is not proof in itself that one is a Christian. It is said that even in the best churches, only half are true Christians.

Yes, people may be like the prodigal son. But the prodigal son returned to his home. He did not stay in the pigpen. The complete parable is as follows.

Luke

015:011 And he said, A certain man had two sons:

015:012 And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living.

015:013 And not many days after the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living.

015:014 And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want.

015:015 And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine.

015:016 And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him.

015:017 And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger!

015:018 I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee,

015:019 And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 015:020 And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him.
- 015:021 And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son.
- 015:022 But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet:
- 015:023 And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat, and be merry:
- 015:024 For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.
- 015:025 Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard musick and dancing.
- 015:026 And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant.
- 015:027 And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound.
- 015:028 And he was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out, and intreated him.
- 015:029 And he answering said to his father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment: and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends:
- 015:030 But as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf.
- 015:031 And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine.
- 015:032 It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found

As mentioned before, a child of God will not stay in the pigpen forever.

**Invite Jesus Into Your Heart**

God is deeply in love with each of us. And if we invite Jesus in, He will abide in us, with a special union or communion, including the Holy Spirit.

## Revelation

- 003:019 As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent.
- 003:020 **Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.**
- 003:021 To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.
- 003:022 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches

## Deuteronomy

- 004:029 **But if from thence thou shalt seek the LORD thy God, thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with all thy heart and with all thy soul.**

Remember,

## Mark

- 012:028 And one of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him, Which is the first commandment of all?
- 012:029 **And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord:**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

012:030 **And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment.**

012:031 And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. There is none other commandment greater than these.

Matthew

006:024 **No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other.** Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

*We should examine ourselves. If we are unsure if we are true Christians, we should repent, truly repent of any sin, open our hearts to Him, and invite Him, Jesus into our hearts.*

John

017:001 **These words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said,** Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee:

017:002 As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him.

017:003 **And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent.**

017:004 I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do.

017:005 And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

017:006 I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word.

017:007 Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee.

017:008 For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me.

017:009 I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine.

017:010 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I am glorified in them.

017:011 And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we are.

017:012 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled.

017:013 And now come I to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves.

017:014 I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

017:015 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil.

017:016 They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

017:017 Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.

017:018 As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world.

017:019 And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.

017:020 **Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word;**

017:021 **That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us:** that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.

017:022 And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that<sup>2</sup> they may be one, even as we are one:

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 017:023 **I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.**
- 017:024 Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world.
- 017:025 O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee: but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me.
- 017:026 And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it: **that the love wherewith thou hast loved me may be in them, and I in them**

Repentance

Turning to God also means turning from sin. It means repentance

2 Peter

- 003:009 The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, **not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.**

Luke

- 005:030 But their scribes and Pharisees murmured against his disciples, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with publicans and sinners?
- 005:031 **And Jesus answering said unto them,** They that are whole need not a physician; but they that are sick.
- 005:032 **I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.**

2 Corinthians

- 007:010 For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death.

There is more on this in the chapter entitled "Importance of Repentance".

Not All Who Believe Are Saved

Simple head faith, mental assent that the bible is true is not saving faith. One must be born again, have the Spirit.

James

- 002:017 Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone.
- 002:018 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works.
- 002:019 **Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble.**
- 002:020 But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?

Matthew

- 007:017 Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.
- 007:018 A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.
- 007:019 Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.
- 007:020 Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

007:021 **Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.**

007:022 **Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works?**

007:023 **And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.**

The following parable by Jesus illustrates this. First note that in the bible, oil often represents the presence of the Holy Spirit. In this parable, the five wise bridesmaids with oil went into the wedding feast while the five without oil were locked out, never being able to enter. This symbolized Christians who have the Spirit being able to enter heaven while those without the indwelling of the Holy Spirit were locked outside.

## Matthew

025:001 Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom.

025:002 And five of them were wise, and five were foolish.

025:003 They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them:

025:004 But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps.

025:005 While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept.

025:006 And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet him.

025:007 Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps.

025:008 And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out.

025:009 But the wise answered, saying, Not so; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves.

025:010 And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut.

025:011 Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us.

025:012 But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not.

025:013 Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh.

**Old Testament Filling of the Holy Spirit**

The Old Testament records how God sent His Spirit to different people who God wanted to use for a particular purpose or task. Notice the following passage.

## Exodus

31:001 **And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying,**

031:002 **See, I have called by name Bezaleel** the son of Uri, the son of Hur, of the tribe of Judah:

031:003 **And I have filled him with the spirit of God, in wisdom, and in understanding, and in knowledge, and in all manner of workmanship,**

031:004 **To devise cunning works, to work in gold, and in silver, and in brass,**

031:005 **And in cutting of stones, to set them, and in carving of timber, to work in all manner of workmanship.**

031:006 **And I, behold, I have given with him Aholiab, the son of Ahisamach, of the tribe of Dan: and in the hearts of all that are wise hearted I have put wisdom, that they may make all that I have commanded thee;**

031:007 **The tabernacle of the congregation, and the ark of the testimony, and the mercy seat that is thereupon, and all the furniture of the tabernacle,**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

031:008 And the table and his furniture, and the pure candlestick with all his furniture, and the altar of incense,  
 031:009 And the altar of burnt offering with all his furniture, and the laver and his foot,  
 031:010 And the cloths of service, and the holy garments for Aaron the priest, and the garments of his sons, to minister in the priest's office,  
 031:011 And the anointing oil, and sweet incense for the holy place: according to all that I have commanded thee shall they do.

God also did this to some who clearly rejected God. These people had the influence of the Holy Spirit without an actual indwelling or special union/communion with Him. The following are 2 examples in the bible of someone having the Spirit of God come upon them and prophesying even though they were not a child of God.

1 Samuel

010:005 **After that thou shalt come to the hill of God, where is the garrison of the Philistines: and it shall come to pass, when thou art come thither to the city, that thou shalt meet a company of prophets coming down from the high place with a psaltery, and a tabret, and a pipe, and a harp, before them; and they shall prophesy:**  
 010:006 **And the Spirit of the LORD will come upon thee, and thou shalt prophesy with them, and shalt be turned into another man.**  
 010:007 And let it be, when these signs are come unto thee, that thou do as occasion serve thee; for God is with thee.  
 010:008 And thou shalt go down before me to Gilgal; and, behold, I will come down unto thee, to offer burnt offerings, and to sacrifice sacrifices of peace offerings: seven days shalt thou tarry, till I come to thee, and shew thee what thou shalt do.  
 010:009 And it was so, that when he had turned his back to go from Samuel, God gave him another heart: and all those signs came to pass that day.  
 010:010 And when they came thither to the hill, behold, a company of prophets met him; and the Spirit of God came upon him, and he prophesied among them.  
 010:011 And it came to pass, when all that knew him beforetime saw that, **behold, he prophesied among the prophets, then the people said one to another, What is this that is come unto the son of Kish? Is Saul also among the prophets?**

1 Samuel

011:006 **And the Spirit of God came upon Saul** when he heard those tidings, and his anger was kindled greatly.

If one studies the life of King Saul in the book of 1 Samuel, one will notice that he never accepted God. And there are passages where Saul referred to God as "you God".

Another person who never believed was the high priest Caiaphas at the time of Jesus's death. Notice the following passage.

John

011:049 **And one of them, named Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all,**  
 011:050 **Nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not.**  
 011:051 **And this spake he not of himself: but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation;**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

011:052 And not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one the children of God that were scattered abroad.

**Danger of Not Teaching Repentance**

Repentance is part of coming into a saving relationship with God. Jesus said in Matthew 6:24, "No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon." So long as people/institutions try being inclusive, they are saying to these people that their way of life is OK, they are saying there is no need for repentance, and they are saying there is no need to turn their heart to God. This is exactly the opposite of what Jesus said in Matthew 6:24 and what He said in Mark 12:30, "And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment". These people/institutions instead of trying to win these people for Christ are effectively encouraging them to stay on the road leading to destruction.

## Was God Right In Sending The Flood?

Some people believe God was wrong in sending a flood which killed off men, women and children. They say if God was good, He would not have done this. Oh?

What is the end for people who reject God? Eventually, when they die, they will not go to heaven. They will go to hell. What is hell like? There is another chapter in this write up which discusses it. For now, just know it is a very unpleasant place. The bible says

James

001:017 **Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father** of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.

Those who reject God should not expect anything good in their afterlife. But it would be generation after generation which would follow this path. Putting an end to these people means untold multitudes were spared being born into families where they would never know God and end up separated from Him in torment for eternity. And these people represented a threat to Noah's family because Noah's family would be tempted by them, similar to what happened to Lot. Just like a surgeon may remove a cancerous leg, so God sometimes needs to remove a rebellious people.

It may seem strange, but when God sent the great flood, it can be seen as an act of mercy.

Also, remember that during the one hundred years when Noah was building the ark, these people had a chance to repent and turn to God while the ark was being built. But they did not. Only Noah and his family believed in God. Was one hundred years too short of a span of time to turn to God?

Some falsely believe God takes pleasure in punishing people. But notice the following verses.

Ezekiel

018:023 **Have I any pleasure at all that the wicked should die? saith the Lord GOD: and not that he should return from his ways, and live?**

Ezekiel

033:011 Say unto them, As I live, **saith the Lord GOD, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked; but that the wicked turn from his way and live: turn ye, turn ye from your evil ways;** for why will ye die, O house of Israel?

2 Peter

003:009 The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, **not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.**

So, God takes no pleasure in punishing people. Some may ask then, why is there a hell. This is discussed in the chapter entitled, "Why Jesus Died On The Cross".

Israel conquering Canaan is another example of why God sometimes pronounces harsh judgement. Notice in the following passage that God was not simply going to empty the land before the Israelis entered it. Instead, they were to take the land. Notice that they were to offer peace terms to the Canaanites. If they refused the terms, the Israelis were to eliminate execute the men and enslave the women and children. Why? Because of their rebellious heart against God. And because if they remained, "That they teach you not to do after all their abominations" (verse 18). That is why God wanted them eliminated. Because like a cancer, they would lead the Israelis against God.



## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

## Deuteronomy

- 020:009 And it shall be, when the officers have made an end of speaking unto the people that they shall make captains of the armies to lead the people.
- 020:010 **When thou comest nigh unto a city to fight against it, then proclaim peace unto it.**
- 020:011 **And it shall be, if it make thee answer of peace, and open unto thee, then it shall be, that all the people that is found therein shall be tributaries unto thee, and they shall serve thee.**
- 020:012 **And if it will make no peace with thee, but will make war against thee, then thou shalt besiege it:**
- 020:013 **And when the LORD thy God hath delivered it into thine hands, thou shalt smite every male thereof with the edge of the sword:**
- 020:014 **But the women, and the little ones, and the cattle, and all that is in the city, even all the spoil thereof, shalt thou take unto thyself; and thou shalt eat the spoil of thine enemies, which the LORD thy God hath given thee.**
- 020:015 Thus shalt thou do unto all the cities which are very far off from thee, which are not of the cities of these nations.
- 020:016 But of the cities of these people, which the LORD thy God doth give thee for an inheritance, thou shalt save alive nothing that breatheth:
- 020:017 But thou shalt utterly destroy them; namely, the Hittites, and the Amorites, the Canaanites, and the Perizzites, the Hivites, and the Jebusites; as the LORD thy God hath commanded thee:
- 020:018 **That they teach you not to do after all their abominations, which they have done unto their gods; so should ye sin against the LORD your God.**
- 020:019 When thou shalt besiege a city a long time, in making war against it to take it, thou shalt not destroy the trees thereof by forcing an axe against them: for thou mayest eat of them, and thou shalt not cut them down (for the tree of the field is man's life) to employ them in the siege:
- 020:020 Only the trees which thou knowest that they be not trees for meat, thou shalt destroy and cut them down; and thou shalt build bulwarks against the city that maketh war with thee, until it be subdued

Another example is the story of Lot. By living in the evil cities of Sodom and Gomorrah, Lot's morals were corrupted and his family rejected God. There is more on this in a chapter in this book called, "Story of Lot / Living in a Godless Society".

Another reason God sometimes pronounces harsh judgement is to bring people to repentance. For example, we know that many will die and there will be great suffering the Great Tribulation Period, which is yet to come. But why will God cause this? The answer can be found in the following passage.

## Revelation

- 007:013 And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, What are these which are arrayed in white robes? and whence came they?
- 007:014 And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, **These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.**
- 007:015 Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple: and he that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them.
- 007:016 They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat.
- 007:017 For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters: and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes

There will be some people who repent during the Great Tribulation. There will be some who come to faith in Jesus during this period.

## Story of Lot / Living in a Godless Society

This section is a repeat of part of what was written in the section entitled, “Issues – Schools”. This is because it is a very important story with a message for Christians. Also, it may be easier for people to go back and find this story if it is in a separate section.

The story of Lot is a great example of what can occur when people fail to follow God’s commandment on this. In this story, Lot, a Godly man and nephew of Abraham, chooses to live near Sodom because it was a fertile area. He ignored the fact that the people there were very evil. Later, the Bible reveals how this warped the judgment of his family and how evil his children became.

The story starts with his decision to live near Sodom.

Genesis

- 013:007 And there was a strife between the herdmen of Abram's cattle and the herdmen of Lot's cattle: and the Canaanite and the Perizzite dwelled then in the land.
- 013:008 And Abram said unto Lot, Let there be no strife, I pray thee, between me and thee, and between my herdmen and thy herdmen; for we be brethren.
- 013:009 Is not the whole land before thee? separate thyself, I pray thee, from me: if thou wilt take the left hand, then I will go to the right; or if thou depart to the right hand, then I will go to the left.
- 013:010 And Lot lifted up his eyes, and beheld all the plain of Jordan, that it was well watered every where, before the LORD destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah, even as the garden of the LORD, like the land of Egypt, as thou comest unto Zoar.
- 013:011 Then Lot chose him all the plain of Jordan; and Lot journeyed east: and they separated themselves the one from the other.
- 013:012 Abram dwelled in the land of Canaan, and Lot dwelled in the cities of the plain, and pitched his tent toward Sodom.
- 013:013 But the men of Sodom were wicked and sinners before the LORD exceedingly.

God then warns Abraham that he plans to destroy Sodom and Gomorrah because of the evil population. Abraham asks God if he would spare the cities for the sake of the righteous (good people). God agrees.

Genesis

- 018:020 And the LORD said, Because the cry of Sodom and Gomorrah is great, and because their sin is very grievous;
- 018:021 I will go down now, and see whether they have done altogether according to the cry of it, which is come unto me; and if not, I will know.
- 018:022 And the men turned their faces from thence, and went toward Sodom: but Abraham stood yet before the LORD.
- 018:023 And Abraham drew near, and said, Wilt thou also destroy the righteous with the wicked?
- 018:024 Peradventure there be fifty righteous within the city: wilt thou also destroy and not spare the place for the fifty righteous that are therein?
- 018:025 That be far from thee to do after this manner, to slay the righteous with the wicked: and that the righteous should be as the wicked, that be far from thee: Shall not the Judge of all the earth do right?
- 018:026 And the LORD said, If I find in Sodom fifty righteous within the city, then I will spare all the place for their sakes.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 018:027 And Abraham answered and said, Behold now, I have taken upon me to speak unto the LORD, which am but dust and ashes:
- 018:028 Peradventure there shall lack five of the fifty righteous: wilt thou destroy all the city for lack of five? And he said, If I find there forty and five, I will not destroy it.
- 018:029 And he spake unto him yet again, and said, Peradventure there shall be forty found there. And he said, I will not do it for forty's sake.
- 018:030 And he said unto him, Oh let not the LORD be angry, and I will speak: Peradventure there shall thirty be found there. And he said, I will not do it, if I find thirty there.
- 018:031 And he said, Behold now, I have taken upon me to speak unto the LORD: Peradventure there shall be twenty found there. And he said, I will not destroy it for twenty's sake.
- 018:032 And he said, Oh let not the LORD be angry, and I will speak yet but this once: Peradventure ten shall be found there. And he said, I will not destroy it for ten's sake.
- 018:033 And the LORD went his way, as soon as he had left communing with Abraham: and Abraham returned unto his place.

Next, Lot meets 2 men, some believe they were angels in human form. Notice in chapter 19 verse 5, men of Sodom asked Lot for the men so they could 'know them' – ie, know them sexually. Notice how warped Lot's view is in verse 8 when he offers his daughters to the men outside his house. Yet he is considered 'righteous' because he is being spared by God. (Remember in chapter 15, verse 6 state the following about Abraham, so it is true of Lot too regardless of his actions, "And he believed in the LORD; and he counted it to him for righteousness.".)

## Genesis

- 019:001 And there came two angels to Sodom at even; and Lot sat in the gate of Sodom: and Lot seeing them rose up to meet them; and he bowed himself with his face toward the ground;
- 019:002 And he said, Behold now, my lords, turn in, I pray you, into your servant's house, and tarry all night, and wash your feet, and ye shall rise up early, and go on your ways. And they said, Nay; but we will abide in the street all night.
- 019:003 And he pressed upon them greatly; and they turned in unto him, and entered into his house; and he made them a feast, and did bake unleavened bread, and they did eat.
- 019:004 But before they lay down, the men of the city, even the men of Sodom, compassed the house round, both old and young, all the people from every quarter:
- 019:005 **And they called unto Lot, and said unto him, Where are the men which came in to thee this night? bring them out unto us, that we may know them.**
- 019:006 And Lot went out at the door unto them, and shut the door after him,
- 019:007 And said, I pray you, brethren, do not so wickedly.
- 019:008 **Behold now, I have two daughters which have not known man; let me, I pray you, bring them out unto you, and do ye to them as is good in your eyes:** only unto these men do nothing; for therefore came they under the shadow of my roof.
- 019:009 And they said, Stand back. And they said again, This one fellow came in to sojourn, and he will needs be a judge: now will we deal worse with thee, than with them. And they pressed sore upon the man, even Lot, and came near to break the door.
- 019:010 But the men put forth their hand, and pulled Lot into the house to them, and shut to the door.
- 019:011 And they smote the men that were at the door of the house with blindness, both small and great: so that they wearied themselves to find the door.

Then God destroyed the 2 cities. Notice that the 2 men (or angels) took Lot, his wife, and his 2 married daughters, but his 2 sons in law did not go, implying they did not believe in God.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

## Genesis

- 019:012 And the men said unto Lot, Hast thou here any besides? son in law, and thy sons, and thy daughters, and whatsoever thou hast in the city, bring them out of this place:
- 019:013 For we will destroy this place, because the cry of them is waxen great before the face of the LORD; and the LORD hath sent us to destroy it.
- 019:014 And Lot went out, and spake unto his sons in law, which married his daughters, and said, Up, get you out of this place; for the LORD will destroy this city. But he seemed as one that mocked unto his sons in law.
- 019:015 And when the morning arose, then the angels hastened Lot, saying, Arise, take thy wife, and thy two daughters, which are here; lest thou be consumed in the iniquity of the city.
- 019:016 And while he lingered, the men laid hold upon his hand, and upon the hand of his wife, and upon the hand of his two daughters; the LORD being merciful unto him: and they brought him forth, and set him without the city.
- 019:017 And it came to pass, when they had brought them forth abroad, that he said, Escape for thy life; look not behind thee, neither stay thou in all the plain; escape to the mountain, lest thou be consumed.
- 019:018 And Lot said unto them, Oh, not so, my LORD:
- 019:019 Behold now, thy servant hath found grace in thy sight, and thou hast magnified thy mercy, which thou hast shewed unto me in saving my life; and I cannot escape to the mountain, lest some evil take me, and I die:
- 019:020 Behold now, this city is near to flee unto, and it is a little one: Oh, let me escape thither, (is it not a little one?) and my soul shall live.
- 019:021 And he said unto him, See, I have accepted thee concerning this thing also, that I will not overthrow this city, for the which thou hast spoken.
- 019:022 Haste thee, escape thither; for I cannot do anything till thou be come thither. Therefore the name of the city was called Zoar.
- 019:023 The sun was risen upon the earth when Lot entered into Zoar.
- 019:024 Then the LORD rained upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and fire from the LORD out of heaven;
- 019:025 And he overthrew those cities, and all the plain, and all the inhabitants of the cities, and that which grew upon the ground.
- 019:026 But his wife looked back from behind him, and she became a pillar of salt.

The epilog to this story is an illustration on how corrupt Lot's daughters were. They caused their father to become drunk and sleep with them.

## Genesis

- 019:030 And Lot went up out of Zoar, and dwelt in the mountain, and his two daughters with him; for he feared to dwell in Zoar: and he dwelt in a cave, he and his two daughters.
- 019:031 And the firstborn said unto the younger, Our father is old, and there is not a man in the earth to come in unto us after the manner of all the earth:
- 019:032 Come, let us make our father drink wine, and we will lie with him, that we may preserve seed of our father.
- 019:033 And they made their father drink wine that night: and the firstborn went in, and lay with her father; and he perceived not when she lay down, nor when she arose.
- 019:034 And it came to pass on the morrow, that the firstborn said unto the younger, Behold, I lay yesternight with my father: let us make him drink wine this night also; and go thou in, and lie with him, that we may preserve seed of our father.
- 019:035 And they made their father drink wine that night also: and the younger arose, and lay with him; and he perceived not when she lay down, nor when she arose.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

019:036 Thus were both the daughters of Lot with child by their father.

And finally

Ezekiel

016:049 Behold, this was the iniquity of thy sister Sodom, pride, fulness of bread, and abundance of idleness was in her and in her daughters, **neither did she strengthen the hand of the poor and needy.**

016:050 And they were haughty, and committed abomination before me: therefore I took them away as I saw good.

Another bible passage also alludes to why these cities were destroyed.

Jude

001:007 **Even as Sodom and Gomorrha, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire.**

2 Peter

002:006 And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrha into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly;

002:007 **And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked:**

002:008 **(For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds;)**

Notice that the passage only says Lot was delivered and Lot was righteous, implying that his daughters who also left were not righteous and rejected God.

This story of Lot illustrates how living in a godless community corrupted him and his family.

- Lot's judgment was corrupted by offering his daughters to the men of Sodom.
- Some of his daughters married godless men who were later destroyed in the city – both those daughters and their husbands.
- His wife failed to believe and died.
- His unmarried daughters caused their father to get drunk and have children by him.
- 2 Peter indicates only Lot was a just person, implying he lost his entire family to all eternity, meaning they will spend eternity with the condemned. How tragic.

This illustrates

How living in a depraved society can destroy one's family. Notice the families of his married daughters died, his wife died, his possessions in those cities were destroyed, and his unmarried daughters were corrupted and his entire family probably went to a place of torment after dying (probably did not have a saving faith in God) because the bible only mentions that Lot was a 'godly' man.

The bible teaches we are saved by grace thru faith in Jesus/God and we can work towards a reward in heaven. It also teaches we still go to heaven but lose a reward by ungodly living. Lot may have lost a reward in heaven.

Why it is important for Christians to have their children raised (go to) Christian schools rather than godless schools, or schools lacking Christian teaching and principals.

## Thoughts on the Death of a Celebrity

Only God knows their destiny as they stand on the threshold of eternity. But we do know that prodigal sons/daughters (Luke 15:11-32) will return to their Father (will repent and return). We also know that if a person is a born-again Christian, you will see some evidence of it in their lives.

James

002:018 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: **shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works.**

002:019 Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble.

002:020 But wilt thou know, O vain man, that **faith without works is dead?**

Even by that, it can be hard to tell what a person's relationship to God is. One famous teacher said one sign is how much a person reads/studies the bible. The more one studies it, the more likely they are a true Christian. As we reflect on their life, we should follow what the Apostle Paul wrote in 2 Corinthians 13:5 that we should examine ourselves to see if we truly are in the faith, truly born again.

2 Corinthians

013:005 **Examine yourselves, whether ye be in the faith;** prove your own selves. Know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?

Remember, while God keeps the door open for people, He may stop trying to bring us to faith as it is written,

Isaiah

055:006 **Seek ye the LORD while he may be found, call ye upon him while he is near:**

055:007 Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the LORD, and he will have mercy upon him; and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon.

055:008 For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the LORD.

055:009 For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts.

To those who read this, note that the bible says **"But if from thence thou shalt seek the LORD thy God, thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with all thy heart and with all thy soul."** (Deuteronomy 4:29) and **"For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life."** (John 3:16) Remember, God is in love with you.

## The Battle of San Bernadino Strait (Oct 24, 1944)

There are some important lessons in the story of a Philistine invasion of Israel circa 1087 BC, when Saul was king of Israel.

1 Samuel

014:001 **Now it came to pass upon a day, that Jonathan the son of Saul said unto the young man that bare his armour, Come, and let us go over to the Philistines' garrison, that is on the other side.** But he told not his father.

014:002 And Saul tarried in the uttermost part of Gibeah under a pomegranate tree which is in Migron: and the people that were with him were about six hundred men;

014:003 And Ahiah, the son of Ahitub, Ichabod's brother, the son of Phinehas, the son of Eli, the LORD's priest in Shiloh, wearing an ephod. And the people knew not that Jonathan was gone.

014:004 And between the passages, by which Jonathan sought to go over unto the Philistines' garrison, there was a sharp rock on the one side, and a sharp rock on the other side: and the name of the one was Bozez, and the name of the other Seneh.

014:005 The forefront of the one was situate northward over against Michmash, and the other southward over against Gibeah.

014:006 **And Jonathan said to the young man that bare his armour, Come, and let us go over unto the garrison of these uncircumcised: it may be that the LORD will work for us: for there is no restraint to the LORD to save by many or by few.**

014:007 And his armourbearer said unto him, Do all that is in thine heart: turn thee; behold, I am with thee according to thy heart.

014:008 Then said Jonathan, Behold, we will pass over unto these men, and we will discover ourselves unto them.

014:009 If they say thus unto us, Tarry until we come to you; then we will stand still in our place, and will not go up unto them.

014:010 **But if they say thus, Come up unto us; then we will go up: for the LORD hath delivered them into our hand: and this shall be a sign unto us.**

014:011 And both of them discovered themselves unto the garrison of the Philistines: and the Philistines said, Behold, the Hebrews come forth out of the holes where they had hid themselves.

014:012 **And the men of the garrison answered Jonathan and his armourbearer, and said, Come up to us, and we will shew you a thing. And Jonathan said unto his armourbearer, Come up after me: for the LORD hath delivered them into the hand of Israel.**

014:013 And Jonathan climbed up upon his hands and upon his feet, and his armourbearer after him: and they fell before Jonathan; and his armourbearer slew after him.

014:014 **And that first slaughter, which Jonathan and his armourbearer made, was about twenty men, within as it were an half acre of land, which a yoke of oxen might plow.**

014:015 **And there was trembling in the host, in the field, and among all the people: the garrison, and the spoilers, they also trembled, and the earth quaked: so it was a very great trembling.**

Some of the Hebrew texts include the word “אֶל־לֹהִים (’ě-lō-hîm)” which means “from God”. Even without that word, it is clear that an earth quake is from God.

The story continues

1 Samuel

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

014:019 And it came to pass, while Saul talked unto the priest, that the noise that was in the host of the Philistines went on and increased: and Saul said unto the priest, Withdraw thine hand.

014:020 **And Saul and all the people that were with him assembled themselves, and they came to the battle: and, behold, every man's sword was against his fellow, and there was a very great discomfiture.**

014:021 Moreover the Hebrews that were with the Philistines before that time, which went up with them into the camp from the country round about, even they also turned to be with the Israelites that were with Saul and Jonathan.

014:022 Likewise all the men of Israel which had hid themselves in mount Ephraim, **when they heard that the Philistines fled, even they also followed hard after them in the battle.**

014:023 **So the LORD saved Israel that day: and the battle passed over unto Bethaven.**

So, the panic caused confusion, and the Philistines attacked each other.

In summary, God sent fear into the hearts of the Philistines and the Israelis won the battle.

This lesson coincides with the following bible passages

Proverbs

016:009 **A man's heart deviseth his way: but the LORD directeth his steps.**

Proverbs

021:001 **The king's heart is in the hand of the LORD, as the rivers of water: he turneth it whithersoever he will.**

So what is the lesson for us today? One lesson is that God still works in today's world in similar ways. Look at other historical situation where the unexpected happened and ask, "Did God cause that?"

Take, for example, the D-Day invasion of Europe on June 6, 1944 during World War 2. American, British and Canadian troops did a sea invasion of northern France against the German forces. It was a close fought battle. The Germans had a reserve armored (tank) division which could have attempted a counter attack. The German generals wanted to send in this division but this could only be done if Adolf Hitler gave the order. Hitler had taken a sleeping pill and ordered that he not be awoken. So no such order went out. Did God direct this step? Consider it.

Another example is the World War 2 naval battle called The Battle of San Bernadino Strait (Oct 24, 1944). In it, a large Japanese fleet which included the world's largest battleship, the Yamato, attacked a small US naval task force protecting an invasion beach. The Yamato itself was larger (weighed more) than the entire US task force. Their orders were to shell/attack the US invasion forces. The American ships vigorously attacked the Japanese out of desperation even though they should have had no chance of winning. The Japanese admiral fearing the unknown, turned his fleet around and ran, giving the US a victory. Did God direct his step? Consider it.



## Let No Man Glory

It is common for people to have heroes, or roll models. And this is fine up to a point, because they guide or encourage us to live better. For example, as children, we look up to our parents as they guide us in how to mature. Sports stars may teach us how to be good team members, how to win and lose gracefully, how to strive to be our best at an activity. We also might admire the talents of actors and singers.

### Herors of the Bible

Even the bible speaks of heroes such as in the following passage.

Hebrews

011:017 **By faith Abraham**, when he was tried, offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten son,

011:018 Of whom it was said, That in Isaac shall thy seed be called:

011:019 Accounting that God was able to raise him up, even from the dead; from whence also he received him in a figure.

011:020 **By faith Isaac** blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come.

011:021 **By faith Jacob**, when he was a dying, blessed both the sons of Joseph; and worshipped, leaning upon the top of his staff.

011:022 **By faith Joseph**, when he died, made mention of the departing of the children of Israel; and gave commandment concerning his bones.

011:023 **By faith Moses**, when he was born, was hid three months of his parents, because they saw he was a proper child; and they were not afraid of the king's commandment.

011:024 **By faith Moses**, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter;

011:025 Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season;

011:026 Esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect unto the recompence of the reward.

011:027 **By faith** he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king: for he endured, as seeing him who is invisible.

011:028 Through faith he kept the passover, and the sprinkling of blood, lest he that destroyed the firstborn should touch them.

011:029 **By faith they passed through the Red sea** as by dry land: which the Egyptians assaying to do were drowned.

011:030 **By faith the walls of Jericho fell down**, after they were compassed about seven days.

011:031 **By faith the harlot Rahab perished not** with them that believed not, when she had received the spies with peace.

011:032 **And what shall I more say? for the time would fail me to tell of Gedeon, and of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephthae; of David also, and Samuel, and of the prophets:**

011:033 Who through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions.

011:034 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens.

011:035 **Women received their dead raised to life again: and others were tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection:**

011:036 **And others had trial of cruel mockings and scourgings**, yea, moreover of bonds and imprisonment:

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

011:037 **They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: they wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins; being destitute, afflicted, tormented;**

011:038 **(Of whom the world was not worthy:) they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth.**

011:039 And these all, having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise:

011:040 God having provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect

These are heroes of faith, people who demonstrated their faithfulness to God. Of course, Paul could have gone on and on in his list in Hebrews. These were just a few examples of people who are heroes of faith, role models for us.

And why did God inspire Paul to write this? God is telling us that the true heroes are those who live by faith, those who follow the leading of the Holy Spirit. Even when it means giving up wealth and power, as in the case of Moses. Even when it means giving up their lives in cruel, torturous deaths like those of the martyrs as mentioned in verses 34-38. Those are the kind of heroes we can look up to, as does God.

One of the best summaries on this may be found in the following passage

Jeremiah 9:23-24

009:023 **Thus saith the LORD, Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom, neither let the mighty man glory in his might, let not the rich man glory in his riches:**

009:024 **But let him that glorieth glory in this, that he understandeth and knoweth me, that I am the LORD which exercise lovingkindness, judgment, and righteousness, in the earth: for in these things I delight, saith the LORD.**

What more can be added to that???

And what does the bible say about revering people of earthly wisdom and knowledge?

1 Corinthians

003:018 Let no man deceive himself. If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise.

003:019 **For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God.** For it is written, He taketh the wise in their own craftiness.

003:020 And again, The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain.

003:021 **Therefore let no man glory in men.** For all things are your's;

003:022 Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; all are your's;

003:023 And ye are Christ's; and Christ is God's

The point is, we are to be followers of Jesus. We should do what God wants and not blindly follow our earthly heroes. The following passages amplify on this.

1 Corinthians

001:017 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel: not with wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ should be made of none effect.

001:018 **For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power of God.**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 001:019 **For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent.**
- 001:020 **Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world?**
- 001:021 **For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe.**
- 001:022 **For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom:**
- 001:023 **But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumblingblock, and unto the Greeks foolishness;**
- 001:024 **But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God.**
- 001:025 **Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men.**
- 001:026 For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called:
- 001:027 **But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty;**
- 001:028 **And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are:**
- 001:029 **That no flesh should glory in his presence.**
- 001:030 But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption:
- 001:031 That, according as it is written, **He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord**

## 1 Corinthians

- 002:001 And I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with excellency of speech or of wisdom, declaring unto you the testimony of God.
- 002:002 **For I determined not to know any thing among you, save Jesus Christ, and him crucified.**
- 002:003 And I was with you in weakness, and in fear, and in much trembling.
- 002:004 And my speech and my preaching was not with enticing words of man's wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of power:
- 002:005 That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.
- 002:006 Howbeit we speak wisdom among them that are perfect: yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the princes of this world, that come to nought:
- 002:007 But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory:
- 002:008 Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.
- 002:009 But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.
- 002:010 But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.
- 002:011 For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.
- 002:012 **Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.**
- 002:013 **Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.**

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

002:014 **But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.**

002:015 But he that is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man.

002:016 For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ

**Pride**

There are many bible passages about pride. The following one is a good reminder of how we should see ourselves.

Philippians

002:003 **Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves.**

**The Greatest Man**

Who did Jesus say was the greatest person of all time? Well, when He spoke, He only discussed people up to that time. But notice the following passage.

Matthew

011:007 And as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind?

011:008 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that wear soft clothing are in kings' houses.

011:009 But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? yea, I say unto you, and more than a prophet.

011:010 For this is he, of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

011:011 Verily I say unto you, **Among them that are born of women there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist:** notwithstanding he that is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he.

And who was John the Baptist? His story is in Matthew chapter 3

Matthew

003:001 In those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judaea,

003:002 And saying, Repent ye: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

003:003 For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

003:004 **And the same John had his raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins; and his meat was locusts and wild honey.**

003:005 **Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judaea, and all the region round about Jordan,**

003:006 And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins.

003:007 But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

003:008 Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance:

003:009 And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

003:010 And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

003:011 I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire:

003:012 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.

But notice who Jesus said could be the greatest. It has nothing to do with human knowledge, wisdom, or ability.

## Matthew 18

018:001 At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?

018:002 And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them,

018:003 And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.

018:004 **Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.**

018:005 And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name receiveth me.

018:006 But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

018:007 Woe unto the world because of offences! for it must needs be that offences come; but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh!

Hero Worship

But “hero worship” can be taken too far. And we see this often in everyday life. People idolize actors or singers, and they accept whatever they say or do as being good or right – regardless what the bible says. Or they idolize a politician who did some good, or spoke enticing words. And then they accept whatever he says – regardless what the bible teaches. Many people are proud to say they are a Democrat or a Republican (that is, they support the party) and blindly accept whatever that party’s policies are. Or people are proud of their race or nationality, forgetting that the bible teaches against racism and forgetting that what someone else of their nationality did does not elevate anyone else.

## Even Great People Have Flaws

### Some Great People In The Bible

Today there are many people who criticize the flaws in others, especially in leaders. But we should remember, even great people of the bible had flaws. The question we should ask is, do they believe in God? Are they trying to do God's will? So let's look at some of the great people in the bible, those which God chose for His special purposes. Let's start with Hebrews 11, which some have called the honor roll of faith, although it is far from complete.

#### Hebrews

011:001 Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.

011:002 For by it the elders obtained a good report.

011:003 Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear.

011:004 **By faith Abel offered unto God** a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead yet speaketh.

011:005 **By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see death;** and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God.

011:006 But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

011:007 **By faith Noah,** being warned of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by faith.

011:008 **By faith Abraham,** when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went.

011:009 By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise:

011:010 For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

011:011 **Through faith also Sara herself** received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a child when she was past age, because she judged him faithful who had promised.

011:012 Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, so many as the stars of the sky in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable.

011:013 These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.

011:014 For they that say such things declare plainly that they seek a country.

011:015 And truly, if they had been mindful of that country from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned.

011:016 But now they desire a better country, that is, an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a city.

011:017 **By faith Abraham,** when he was tried, offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten son,

011:018 Of whom it was said, That in Isaac shall thy seed be called:

011:019 Accounting that God was able to raise him up, even from the dead; from whence also he received him in a figure.

011:020 **By faith Isaac** blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 011:021 **By faith Jacob**, when he was a dying, blessed both the sons of Joseph; and worshipped, leaning upon the top of his staff.
- 011:022 **By faith Joseph**, when he died, made mention of the departing of the children of Israel; and gave commandment concerning his bones.
- 011:023 **By faith Moses**, when he was born, was hid three months of his parents, because they saw he was a proper child; and they were not afraid of the king's commandment.
- 011:024 By faith Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter;
- 011:025 Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season;
- 011:026 Esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect unto the recompence of the reward.
- 011:027 By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king: for he endured, as seeing him who is invisible.
- 011:028 Through faith he kept the passover, and the sprinkling of blood, lest he that destroyed the firstborn should touch them.
- 011:029 By faith they passed through the Red sea as by dry land: which the Egyptians assaying to do were drowned.
- 011:030 By faith the walls of Jericho fell down, after they were compassed about seven days.
- 011:031 **By faith the harlot Rahab** perished not with them that believed not, when she had received the spies with peace.
- 011:032 And what shall I more say? **for the time would fail me to tell of Gedeon, and of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephthae; of David also, and Samuel, and of the prophets:**
- 011:033 Who through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions.
- 011:034 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens.
- 011:035 Women received their dead raised to life again: and others were tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection:
- 011:036 And others had trial of cruel mockings and scourgings, yea, moreover of bonds and imprisonment:
- 011:037 They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: they wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins; being destitute, afflicted, tormented;
- 011:038 (Of whom the world was not worthy:) they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth.
- 011:039 And these all, having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise:
- 011:040 God having provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect

Another great passage is in 2 Peter which speaks of Lot who God rescued for the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah before He destroyed them. Notice how Lot is called a righteous and godly man, even though the account of him in Genesis shows he had many flaws.

## 2 Peter

- 002:006 And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly;
- 002:007 **And delivered just Lot**, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked:
- 002:008 (**For that righteous man** dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds;)
- 002:009 The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished:

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

## 1 Corinthians

001:027 But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty;

001:028 And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are:

001:029 That no flesh should glory in his presence.

**Even Great People of Faith in the Bible Have Flaws**

So often people say political candidates are not qualified for office because of a personal flaw. Rather than look at the issues, people often prefer to look at details of the lives of the candidates, their personalities, and the like to decide who to vote for. But of the people praised in the bible for being great, notice some of the flaws of these people. Yet they were great leaders. And they were great in God's sight because they sought to do His will. The point is, people should concentrate on whether a candidate seeks to do God's will, and look at their policies instead of their personalities and personal flaws.

**Noah**

Most people know the story of Noah and the ark, how God saved him and his family when the great flood came. The Apostle Peter summarized it this way.

## 2 Peter

002:004 For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment;

002:005 And spared not the old world, **but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly;**

But Noah had flaws too. One mentioned in the bible is when he was drunk and naked. It may be a minor thing but it is recorded.

## Genesis

09:020 And Noah began to be an husbandman, and he planted a vineyard:

009:021 And he drank of the wine, and was drunken; and he was uncovered within his tent.

**Abraham**

He had a child with a woman who was not his wife.

## Genesis

016:001 Now Sarai Abram's wife bare him no children: and she had an handmaid, an Egyptian, whose name was Hagar.

016:002 And Sarai said unto Abram, Behold now, the LORD hath restrained me from bearing: I pray thee, go in unto my maid; it may be that I may obtain children by her. And Abram hearkened to the voice of Sarai.

016:003 And Sarai Abram's wife took Hagar her maid the Egyptian, after Abram had dwelt ten years in the land of Canaan, and gave her to her husband Abram to be his wife.



## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

016:004 And he went in unto Hagar, and she conceived: and when she saw that she had conceived, her mistress was despised in her eyes.

Sara

She encouraged Abraham to sleep with their servant, who was not his wife.

Moses

Moses, a great leader who wrote the first 5 books of the bible, also murdered someone early in his life.

## Exodus

002:011 And it came to pass in those days, when Moses was grown, that he went out unto his brethren, and looked on their burdens: and he spied an Egyptian smiting an Hebrew, one of his brethren.

002:012 And he looked this way and that way, and when he saw that there was no man, he slew the Egyptian, and hid him in the sand.

Moses was also reluctant to accept God's order for him to lead the Hebrews out of Egypt, pointing out that he (Moses) did not speak well.

## Exodus

004:010 **And Moses said unto the LORD, O my LORD, I am not eloquent, neither heretofore, nor since thou hast spoken unto thy servant: but I am slow of speech, and of a slow tongue.**

004:011 And the LORD said unto him, Who hath made man's mouth? or who maketh the dumb, or deaf, or the seeing, or the blind? have not I the LORD?

004:012 Now therefore go, and I will be with thy mouth, and teach thee what thou shalt say.

004:013 And he said, O my LORD, send, I pray thee, by the hand of him whom thou wilt send.

004:014 And the anger of the LORD was kindled against Moses, and he said, Is not Aaron the Levite thy brother? I know that he can speak well. And also, behold, he cometh forth to meet thee: and when he seeth thee, he will be glad in his heart.

004:015 And thou shalt speak unto him, and put words in his mouth: and I will be with thy mouth, and with his mouth, and will teach you what ye shall do.

004:016 And he shall be thy spokesman unto the people: and he shall be, even he shall be to thee instead of a mouth, and thou shalt be to him instead of God.

Rahab

Rahab was a prostitute.

## Hebrews

011:031 **By faith the harlot Rahab** perished not with them that believed not, when she had received the spies with peace.

Barak

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

He would only follow God's command if a woman went with him to war.

## Judges

004:004 And Deborah, a prophetess, the wife of Lapidoth, she judged Israel at that time.

004:005 And she dwelt under the palm tree of Deborah between Ramah and Bethel in mount Ephraim: and the children of Israel came up to her for judgment.

004:006 And she sent and called Barak the son of Abinoam out of Kedeshnaphtali, and said unto him, Hath not the LORD God of Israel commanded, saying, Go and draw toward mount Tabor, and take with thee ten thousand men of the children of Naphtali and of the children of Zebulun?

004:007 And I will draw unto thee to the river Kishon Sisera, the captain of Jabin's army, with his chariots and his multitude; and I will deliver him into thine hand.

004:008 **And Barak said unto her, If thou wilt go with me, then I will go: but if thou wilt not go with me, then I will not go.**

004:009 **And she said, I will surely go with thee: notwithstanding the journey that thou takest shall not be for thine honour; for the LORD shall sell Sisera into the hand of a woman. And Deborah arose, and went with Barak to Kedesh.**

Samson

Samson was a judge of Israel that appears to have been scared to talk with a woman he liked.

## Judges

014:001 And Samson went down to Timnath, and saw a woman in Timnath of the daughters of the Philistines.

014:002 And he came up, and told his father and his mother, and said, I have seen a woman in Timnath of the daughters of the Philistines: now therefore get her for me to wife.

Jephthae

No comment.

## Judges

011:030 And Jephthah vowed a vow unto the LORD, and said, If thou shalt without fail deliver the children of Ammon into mine hands,

011:031 Then it shall be, that whatsoever cometh forth of the doors of my house to meet me, when I return in peace from the children of Ammon, shall surely be the LORD's, and I will offer it up for a burnt offering.

011:032 So Jephthah passed over unto the children of Ammon to fight against them; and the LORD delivered them into his hands.

011:033 And he smote them from Aroer, even till thou come to Minnith, even twenty cities, and unto the plain of the vineyards, with a very great slaughter. Thus the children of Ammon were subdued before the children of Israel.

011:034 And Jephthah came to Mizpeh unto his house, and, behold, his daughter came out to meet him with timbrels and with dances: and she was his only child; beside her he had neither son nor daughter.

011:035 And it came to pass, when he saw her, that he rent his clothes, and said, Alas, my daughter! thou hast brought me very low, and thou art one of them that trouble me: for I have opened my mouth unto the LORD, and I cannot go back.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

- 011:036 And she said unto him, My father, if thou hast opened thy mouth unto the LORD, do to me according to that which hath proceeded out of thy mouth; forasmuch as the LORD hath taken vengeance for thee of thine enemies, even of the children of Ammon.
- 011:037 And she said unto her father, Let this thing be done for me: let me alone two months, that I may go up and down upon the mountains, and bewail my virginity, I and my fellows.
- 011:038 And he said, Go. And he sent her away for two months: and she went with her companions, and bewailed her virginity upon the mountains.
- 011:039 And it came to pass at the end of two months, that she returned unto her father, who did with her according to his vow which he had vowed: and she knew no man. And it was a custom in Israel,
- 011:040 That the daughters of Israel went yearly to lament the daughter of Jephthah the Gileadite four days in a year

David

King David is viewed rightly as being the greatest king Israel ever had. The reason is because he desired to do God's will, as God stated in the following passage before David was made king.

## 1 Samuel

- 013:013 And Samuel said to Saul, Thou hast done foolishly: thou hast not kept the commandment of the LORD thy God, which he commanded thee: for now would the LORD have established thy kingdom upon Israel for ever.
- 013:014 But now thy kingdom shall not continue: **the LORD hath sought him a man after his own heart, and the LORD hath commanded him to be captain over his people**, because thou hast not kept that which the LORD commanded thee.

But even King David had some terrible sins including murder and having multiple wives.

## 2 Samuel

- 012:007 **And Nathan said to David, Thou art the man.** Thus saith the LORD God of Israel, I anointed thee king over Israel, and I delivered thee out of the hand of Saul;
- 012:008 And I gave thee thy master's house, and thy master's wives into thy bosom, and gave thee the house of Israel and of Judah; and if that had been too little, I would moreover have given unto thee such and such things.
- 012:009 Wherefore hast thou despised the commandment of the LORD, to do evil in his sight? **thou hast killed Uriah the Hittite with the sword, and hast taken his wife to be thy wife, and hast slain him with the sword of the children of Ammon.**
- 012:010 Now therefore the sword shall never depart from thine house; because thou hast despised me, and hast taken the wife of Uriah the Hittite to be thy wife.
- 012:011 Thus saith the LORD, Behold, I will raise up evil against thee out of thine own house, **and I will take thy wives before thine eyes, and give them unto thy neighbour, and he shall lie with thy wives in the sight of this sun.**
- 012:012 For thou didst it secretly: but I will do this thing before all Israel, and before the sun.

If one reads the passages about David carefully, it appears he was largely an absent and poor father for his children too.

Samuel

In the history of Israel, there was a time called the Period of the Judges. This was a time of a theocracy and God appointed judges. Samuel was one of the great judges. But notice his error, his appointment of his sons as the next judges in Israel even though they were evil.

## Miscellaneous Teachings 1.6

1 Samuel

008:001 And it came to pass, **when Samuel was old, that he made his sons judges over Israel.**

008:002 Now the name of his firstborn was Joel; and the name of his second, Abiah: they were judges in Beersheba.

008:003 **And his sons walked not in his ways, but turned aside after lucre, and took bribes, and perverted judgment.**

**Paul the Apostle**

The great Apostle Paul, before he was converted, participated in the arrest and execution of Christians. One passage regarding this is.

Acts

007:057 Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord,

007:058 **And cast him out of the city, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young man's feet, whose name was Saul.**

007:059 And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.

007:060 And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep

008:001 **And Saul was consenting unto his death.** And at that time there was a great persecution against the church which was at Jerusalem; and they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judaea and Samaria, except the apostles.

008:002 And devout men carried Stephen to his burial, and made great lamentation over him.

008:003 **As for Saul, he made havock of the church, entering into every house, and haling men and women committed them to prison.**

008:004 Therefore they that were scattered abroad went every where preaching the word.